

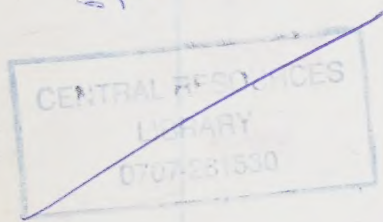




Tusser

6/12

~~16 AUG 1986~~



JUL 1995

21 JUL 1995

23 MAR 2004

8/08

~~28 APR 1984~~

CANNOT BE RENEWED

~~15 MAR 1978~~

~~4 AUG 1979~~

~~19 MAY 1984~~

~~20 JUL 1979~~

~~1 SEP 1984~~

~~18 OCT 1980~~

~~2 MAR 1985~~

L 33

159,435. 630.

Please renew/return this item by the last date shown.

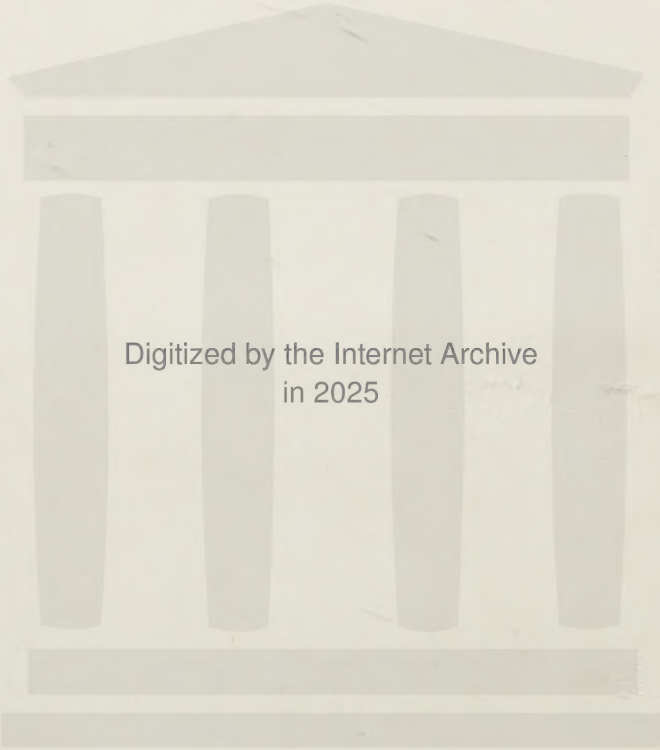
So that your telephone call is charged at local rate, please call the numbers as set out below:

|                 |                         |
|-----------------|-------------------------|
| From Area codes | From the rest of Herts: |
| 01923 or 0208:  |                         |

|            |              |              |
|------------|--------------|--------------|
| Renewals:  | 01923 471373 | 01438 737373 |
| Enquiries: | 01923 471333 | 01438 737333 |
| Minicom:   | 01923 471599 | 01438 737599 |

L32b





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2025



FIVE  
HUNDRED POINTS  
OF  
Good Husbandry,

AS WELL FOR THE CHAMPION OR OPEN COUNTRY,  
AS FOR THE WOODLAND OR SEVERAL;

TOGETHER WITH

A Book of Huswifery.

Being a Calendar of rural and domestic Economy,  
FOR EVERY MONTH IN THE YEAR;

And exhibiting a Picture of the

AGRICULTURE, CUSTOMS, AND MANNERS  
OF ENGLAND,

IN THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

---

By Thomas Tusser, Gentleman.

---

A NEW EDITION,

WITH NOTES, GEORGICAL, ILLUSTRATIVE, AND EXPLANATORY,  
A GLOSSARY, AND OTHER IMPROVEMENTS.

---

By WILLIAM MAJOR, LL. D.

HONORARY MEMBER OF THE BOARD OF AGRICULTURE, &c.

---

*Multa renascentur, quæ jam cecidère, cadentque,  
Quæ nunc sunt in honore.* Hor.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR LACKINGTON, ALLEN, AND CO.

TEMPLE OF THE MUSES, FINSBURY-SQUARE.

---

1812.

C6146138-5

35224

HARDING AND WRIGHT,  
PRINTERS,  
St. John's Square, London.

Feb 10, 1812

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE  
*SIR JOHN SINCLAIR, Bart. &c. &c. &c.*

PRESIDENT OF THE BOARD OF AGRICULTURE;

TO

THE RIGHT HON. JOHN FOSTER, M. P.  
EDWARD LOVEDEN LOVEDEN, Esq. M. P.  
JOHN FANE, Esq. M. P.  
ADMIRAL BENTINCK,

VICE-PRESIDENTS;

AND TO THE NOBLEMEN AND GENTLEMEN,  
WHO ARE MEMBERS OF THAT HIGHLY IMPORTANT NATIONAL  
ESTABLISHMENT,

THIS

*NEW EDITION*

OF A WORK WHICH HAS BEEN HONORED BY THEIR EXPRESS PATRONAGE,  
AS SOME SMALL TESTIMONY OF GRATITUDE FOR FAVOURS RECEIVED, IS

MOST RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,

BY THEIR MOST DEVOTED,

AND OBLIGED HUMBLE SERVANT,

WILLIAM MAVOR.

*Rectory, Woodstock,  
Feb. 10, 1812.*



|                |           |
|----------------|-----------|
| STOCK NUMBER   | CONDITION |
| 159735         | S.H.      |
| CLASSIFICATION | ISSUES    |
| 630            |           |

## Biographical Sketch

OF

## Tusser.

---

THE personal interest which an author excites, is not always in proportion to the celebrity of his work. Of Thomas Tusser, one of our earliest didactic poets, and who has been styled the BRITISH VARRO, few particulars are known, beyond what he has himself recorded in his own poetical life; and from the paucity of chronological data which he has furnished, and the general silence of contemporaries, much uncertainty is thrown on the period when he first saw the light, and on the date of some of the more important passages of his existence.

According to Warton, he was born about the year 1523, in the reign of Henry VIII. but with more probability about 1515 \*, else it would be impossible to crowd into the

---

\* On this supposition, which, though not positively confirmed by any research which I have been able to make, is certainly not invalidated by any direct evidence, his dying at a pretty advanced age about 1580, a fact not disputed, may be thus made out. I have followed the incidents of his life, as written by himself, which appear to me to be the only fair grounds of decision. I will suppose that Tusser was seven years of age when he was sent to Wallingford college, that he staid there till he was ten, was then pressed into some choir, where he continued two years, and three years at St. Paul's, which will bring him to fifteen. He was then sent to Eton, probably from

## Biographical Sketch

space such a variety of incidents as composed his chequered life. On his own authority, we learn that Rivenhall, near Witham in Essex, was the place of his nativity; and for the gentility of his family he refers us to "the Herald's Book \*." The name and race, however, have long been extinct.

previous engagements, later than other boys, on purpose, as he says himself, "to learn the Latin phrase," which would reasonably employ him till he was nineteen or twenty. I cannot allow him to have been older in 1534 than nineteen; because it may be presumed, that UDALL, whose pupil he was for some time at least, was not appointed master of Eton school till that year. At Cambridge, he probably staid about three years, for we do not find that he took any degree, and left it at twenty-three, in order to attend the court. In that situation he expressly says, he remained ten years, which will make him thirty-three, when he retired from its bustle and intrigues, in the reign of Edward VI. In his thirty-fourth year, I conjecture that he married, and settled as a farmer at Katwade, or Cattiwade, in Suffolk; and it is not allowing him too long for the experience of which he boasts, and which he really seems to have possessed, to conclude that he must have been a practical farmer for eight years before he published the first edition of his book, in 1557, at the time, according to the previous calculations, when he was forty-two years of age; so that he was about sixty-five when he died, in 1580. That he was more than fifty-seven, which, on the supposition that he was born in 1523, would have been the case, may be inferred from his own words, in the conclusion of his life, where he says, "death draweth near;" which event, though we ought undoubtedly to anticipate at every age, would have less propriety of application when a man was barely turned fifty, as he would have been in 1573, when the life was first published, than when he was approaching the confines of sixty. These conjectures, for they are nothing more, though the fruits of due reflection, are respectfully submitted to the diligent inquirer.

\* I am obliged to Francis Townsend, Esq. Windsor Herald, for the following information relative to the Tusser family.

"DEAR SIR,

*Herald's College, May 1, 1810.*

"I much wish it were in my power to furnish you with a satisfactory answer to the principal point in question (the birth of Tusser); but there

## Of Tusser.

At an early age, notwithstanding his own reluctance and his mother's tears, his father put him to a music school; and he was soon placed as a chorister or singing-boy in the collegiate chapel of the Castle of Wallingford, which consisted of a dean, six prebendaries, six clerks, and four choristers, and was dissolved in 1549. In this situation he pathetically laments the hardships he endured; but having a fine voice, he was pressed, as was the despotic practice of the times, for the service of one of the choirs\*; and after being bandied about from one place to another, which loss of time he mentions with regret, it was his good fortune, at length, to be admitted into St. Paul's, where he

---

is nothing in this office, by which I can feel myself warranted to place that event at an earlier period than that already assigned to it. His nephew, John Tusser, son of his eldest brother Clement, recorded his pedigree at the Herald's visitation of Essex, in 1570; and this is the only record we have of the family.

“ By this it appears, that William Tusser, the father, had five sons, Clement, Andrew, John, THOMAS, and William, and four daughters; the marriages of the daughters are set down, but no wives assigned to the sons, except to Clement, who married Ursula Petts, and had issue, John, who entered the pedigree, Edward, and Jane, all three unmarried in 1570. The mother of THOMAS was<sup>(1)</sup> a daughter of Thomas Smith, of Rivenhall in Essex, Esq. whose elder brother, Hugh, was ancestor of Smith, Lord Carrington, (not the present lord), sister of Sir Clement Smith, who married a sister of the Protector Somerset, and first cousin of Sir John Smith, one of the Barons of the Exchequer in the reign of Edward VI. This match with Smith I take to have been the chief foundation of gentility in the Tussers; for I find no traces of them or their arms before this connection.

“ I am,” &c.

(1) *Isabella, according to Morant, vol. ii. p. 149.*

---

\* It does not appear that he was pressed for the actual service of the king's chapel, in the first instance, as has been insinuated by some. See his poetical life, and the note *in loco*.



## Biographical Sketch

arrived at considerable proficiency in music, under John Redford, the organist of that cathedral, a man distinguished for his attainments in the science.

From St. Paul's he was sent to Eton school, and was certainly some time under the tuition of the famous Nicholas Udall\*, who is said to have been master of that seminary in 1534; and of whose severity Tusser complains, in giving him fifty-three stripes at once, "for fault but small, or none at all."

Hence he was removed to Cambridge†; and, according to some, was first entered of King's College, and afterwards removed to Trinity Hall, which receives some little countenance from his own words:

To London hence, to Cambridge thence,  
With thanks to thee, O Trinity,  
That to thy hall, so passing all,  
*I got at last.*

After encountering a long sickness, which obliged him to discontinue his studies, he left the banks of the Cam, and was employed about court, probably in his musical capacity, by the influence of his patron, William Lord Paget, in whose family he appears to have been a retainer, and whom he mentions in the highest terms of panegyric‡.

\* Udall was reckoned a very elegant scholar, though few evidences of his attainments now remain. His severity rendered him odious to his scholars; and from this cause, probably, his private character did not escape censure.

† Through every accessible channel I have endeavoured, but in vain, to obtain some traces of Tusser at Cambridge.

‡ Of this nobleman, the ancestor of the Earl of Uxbridge, and whose patronage of Tusser will probably be longer remembered than all the more

## Of Cusser.

In this situation, which must have been during the latter part of the reign of Henry VIII. and the first years of

---

important passages of his life, it will not be improper, in this place, to give an abstracted account from Dugdale.

William Lord Paget, son to — Paget, one of the Serjeants at Mace of the City of London, was born at Wednesbury in Staffordshire.

Twenty-third Henry VIII. he rose to be Clerk of the Signet; thirty-second, was made Clerk of the Council, and Clerk of the Privy Seal, and soon after Clerk of the Parliament for life; thirty-third, was sent, in consequence of his excellent conduct, as Ambassador into France; on his return was made one of the Principal Secretaries of State. Thirty-sixth of Henry VIII. being then Sir William Paget, he was constituted one of the Commissioners to treat with the Earl of Lenox, for the advancement of the King's interest in Scotland. Same year he attended Henry in his expedition to Boulogne, and was associated with others, to treat with the ambassadors of France for a general peace. Thirty-seventh, he obtained a grant to himself and to John Mason, Esq. or the survivor of them, of Master of the Post, with a salary of 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* *per annum.* Thirty-eighth, was a Commissioner in concluding peace with France; and soon after appointed one of the King's executors, and of the Council to Edward VI. Second of Edward VI. he obtained a grant of the fee of the house without Temple-bar, first called Paget House, then Leicester House, and lastly Essex House. Fourth, sent Ambassador to the Emperor Charles V. Same year, being then Knight of the Garter, Comptroller of the King's household, and Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, he was called by writ to Parliament, by the title of Lord Paget of Beaudesert, *com. Salop.* and soon after sent to treat for peace with France. On the fall of the Duke of Somerset, 5th of Edward VI. his enemies prevailed against him, on the charge of designing the murder of several noblemen at Paget House. In consequence, he was sent to the Tower, and stripped of his ensigns of the order of the Garter. Some charges, better substantiated, were made against him, though arising from the excess of his zeal in the service of his prince, and he was deprived of all his employments, and fined 6000*l.* of which sum one-third was remitted. All this he bore with manly fortitude.

On the death of Edward he joined the Earl of Arundel, the chief champion of Queen Mary, and gained her favour by his activity. Soon after her marriage with Philip II. he was sent ambassador to the Emperor at Brussels, to consult Cardinal Pole respecting the restoration of popery. In this reign he was made Lord Privy Seal.

## Biographical Sketch

Edward VI. when his patron was in great favour, he remained ten years; but being disgusted with the vices, and harassed with the contentions of the courtiers, or, what is more probable, finding, to use his own words, "the court began to frown," he retired into the country, and marrying, embraced the profession of a farmer at Katwade \*, now Cat-tiwade, a hamlet of the parish of Brantham, in Samford Hundred, Suffolk, near the river Stour, which divides that county from Essex. Here he "devised," or composed, his book of Husbandry, the first edition of which was published in 1557, and dedicated † to his patron, William Lord Paget, then Lord Privy Seal; and who, after several reverses of fortune, on the accession of Mary, to whose

---

Lord Paget died very aged, in 1565, and was buried at Drayton, in Middlesex. A monument, erected to his memory at Litchfield, with a suitable inscription, was destroyed during the usurpation. He left issue by Anne, his wife, daughter of — Prestin, Esq. Com. Lanc. three sons and five daughters. His eldest son Henry succeeded him in the title; but dying in 1563, the peerage descended to his next brother Thomas, whom Tusser claims also for a patron. Thomas, being zealously affected to popery, and discoveries being made which betrayed his good wishes in favour of Mary Queen of Scots, fled the kingdom, and was attainted, 29th Eliz. as was likewise his brother Charles. Thomas died three years after at Brussels, leaving issue by Margaret, his wife, daughter of H. Newton, Thomas, his son and heir.

\* In the later editions of the "Husbandry," printed Ratwade, and by some transferred to Sussex. Warton falls into this mistake.

† In the first stanza of the acrostical dedication, we find some material differences between the first and the following editions, as will appear on comparison. I give the orthography, as well as the words.

The trouth doth teache that tyme must serve,

(How euer man doth blase his mynde)

(Of thynges most lyke to thriue or sterue:)

Much apt to judge is often blynde.

And therefore tyme it doth behoofe;

Shall make of trouth a perfit prooffe.

cause he adhered, had regained his influence, and been re-instated in power.

It is probable that he must have been acquainted with rural affairs, for several years at least, before he could produce even the rude essay, which forms the germ of his future and more enlarged work. In it, indeed, we find a correct outline of agriculture, which could only be drawn by a practical hand ; the laying on of the colours, however, was the fruit of more ample experience and observation.

The ill state of his wife's health, together with the too probable embarrassment of his affairs, and reinforced by a restless disposition, at length induced him to change his situation at Katwade ; and we find him successively at Ipswich, where he lost " good wif," the only epithet by which she is known ! at West Dereham, and at Norwich.

Soon after the loss of his first wife, he married a second, of the name of *Moon*, on which changeable planet he plays, by contrasting it with the object of his choice. It may be fairly inferred from his own words, that his happiness was not permanently promoted by this match. He seems to complain of the charges incident " to a wife in youth ;" and had she transmitted her real thoughts to posterity, we should probably have heard some insinuations against an old husband.

The patrons of Tusser, in Norfolk, were Sir Richard Southwell, and afterwards Salisbury, Dean of Norwich, who probably procured him the place of singing man in the cathedral. With that feeling of gratitude which distinguishes his character, he thus apostrophizes his benefactor :

But Salisbury how, were kept my vow,  
If praise from thee were kept by me,  
Thou gentle dean, mine only mean,  
There then to thrive.



## Biographical Sketch

Again he commenced tithe farmer at Fairsted, in the vicinity of his native place ; but his mind was too liberal, and he was too little a match, for the artifices of his vulgar brethren to thrive in this vocation ; and in consequence he retired to London, which he mentions with due commendation. Indeed, it has often been remarked, that though literary men in general affect to be fond of the country, they never feel themselves perfectly at home but in cities. In London, more especially, every taste may be gratified, and every accommodation procured. A person of a cultivated mind may learn to endure, but he can never relish the low habits and pursuits of common men : he sighs for enlightened society and congenial feelings, but he sighs in vain, if fortune has cast his lot remote from the metropolis.

Who that with thee, can hardly agree,  
Nor can well praise thy friendly ways,  
Shall friendship find, to please his mind,  
In places few.

The plague, however, raging in London in 1574, and more particularly in the following year, he sought refuge at Cambridge, as he says,

When gains were gone, and years grew on,  
And death did cry, from London fly \*,  
In Cambridge then, I found again,  
A resting plot ;  
In college best, of all the rest,  
With thanks to thee, O Trinity !  
Through thee and thine, for me and mine,  
Some stay I got.

---

\* See note *in loco*.

When the danger vanished, it is likely that Tusser's predilection for London returned ; and he died there, according to the best authorities, about 1580\* ; not at a very advanced age, as has been vaguely asserted, without considering circumstances, but on the data I have assumed, and which I trust are pretty strong, about sixty-five years old. His remains were interred in St. Mildred's church in the Poultry ; and the following epitaph, according to Stow, recorded his memory. It is perfectly in character with the man and his writings ; and, if conjecture may be allowed, was penned by himself.

Here Thomas Tusser, clad in earth, doth lie,  
 Who sometime made the Points of Husbandry :  
 By him then learn thou may'st,—here learn we must,  
 When all is done, we sleep, and turn to dust :  
 And yet, through Christ, to heaven we hope to go,  
 Who reads his books, shall find his faith was so †.

For an author, the vicissitudes of his life present an uncommon variety of incident. “ Without a tincture of careless imprudence,” says Warton, “ or vicious extravagance, this desultory character seems to have thrived in no vocation.” Fuller quaintly observes, “ That his stone, which gathered no moss, was the stone of Sisyphus ; and in Peacham's *Minerva*, a book of emblems printed in 1612,

---

\* The precise time of his death is as little ascertained as that of his birth. It is certain, however, that he died before 1585, as appears from the title of the edition of that date.

† This epitaph is copied from Stow's *Survey of London*, Ed. 4to. 1618. p. 474. In the *Censura Literaria*, it is given with some verbal alterations.

## Biographical Sketch

there is a device of a whetstone and a scythe, with these lines :

They tell me, Tusser, when thou wert alive,  
 And hadst for profit turned every stone,  
 Where'er thou camest, thou couldst never thrive,  
 Though hereto, best couldst counsel every one,  
 As it may in thy HUSBANDRY appear,  
 Wherein afresh thou liv'st among us here.  
 So, like thyself, a number more are wont,  
 To sharpen others with advice of wit,  
 When they themselves are like the whetstone blunt\*.

The precepts of Tusser, indeed, are so excellent, that few can read them without profit and improvement ; but between the cool collected good sense that sometimes appears in an author's works, and his conduct as influenced by the temptations and perplexities of life, the discordance is often extreme. Some men are the shuttlecocks of fortune, and with the best intentions are always wrong ; with the most serious private resolutions of consistency and propriety, are easily driven from their course when they come in contact with the world. That prudence which yields to no temptation, and never deviates from the proper path, is seldom to be found among men of cultivated minds and lively imaginations. Between a courtier and a practical farmer, the contrast is so great, and especially between a poet and a plodding man

---

\* Thus altered in " Recreations for ingenious Head Pieces ; or a pleasant Grove for their Wits to walk in," &c. 8vo. 1641, &c.

Tusser, they tell me, when thou wert alive,  
 Thou, teaching thrift, thyself couldst never thrive :  
 So, like the whetstone, many men are wont,  
 To sharpen others, when themselves are blunt.

of business, that we need not be surprised our author was unsuccessful in the management of rural affairs. Yet he appears to have possessed such a degree of pious resignation to the will of the Supreme, of Christian charity, and of good humour, under all his miscarriages, that his character rises high in our esteem, independent of his merits as a writer.

---



## PRELIMINARY DISSERTATION.

---

It has often been remarked, that an editor is usually enamoured of his author, in the same manner as a lover is of his mistress, and therefore is incapable of seeing those faults, which would be obvious to less partial eyes. I will not deny that the time and trouble I have expended on this old poet, have endeared him to me the more; because no man is willing to have it supposed that he has laboured in vain—without credit, and without utility. As the notes, however, which I have written, are pretty copious, and contain my sentiments, not only on the whole, but on component parts, it will be unnecessary to enlarge in this place on the particular merits of the author.

If, however, the number of editions his work ran through, can be any test of merit, as it undoubtedly is of public opinion, few authors can come in competition with *Tusser*, whose work, notwithstanding, is so scarce in the best and standard editions, I mean those of 1580 and 1585, that after having formed and digested my plan for some time, had it not been for the well known liberality of *Richard Heber, Esq.* who delights to make his ample literary treasures subservient to every useful undertaking, and who kindly furnished me with copies of the above, I must at last have relinquished my design. Between the later editions and those, indeed, the difference is so great, in point of correctness, that without such aids, it would have been impossible to make out the sense. Yet all are scarce, and

not one in three perfect; a proof that what was intended for practical use, had been sedulously applied to that purpose. In short, to use the words of Mr. Haslewood \*, “ Some books become heir-looms from value; and Tusser’s work, for useful information in every department of agriculture, together with its quaint and amusing observations, perhaps passed the copies from father to son, till they crumbled away in the bare shifting of the pages, and the mouldering relict only lost its value, by the casual mutilation of time. Of early dates, few remain; and every edition obtains a respectable price at the book auctions.” From the same accurate authority, I subjoin a list of the various recorded editions, with some additional remarks from the MS. notes of the late eminent antiquary, Mr. Ashby, which fortunately fell into my hands, and such observations of my own, as an intimate acquaintance with the work suggested and supplied.

---

## CATALOGUE OF THE EDITIONS OF TUSSER.

1557. “ A HUNDRETH GOOD POINTES OF HUSBANDRIE.

A hundreth good pointes of husbandry,  
 Maintaineth good household, with huswifry.  
 Housekeeping and husbandry, if it be good :  
 Must love one another like cousinnes in blood.  
 The wife to, must husband as well as the man,  
 Or farewell thy husbandry do what thou can.

Imprinted at London, in Flete strete, within Temple barre, at the sygne of the hand and starre, by Richard

---

\* See British Bibliographer, No. III.

## Preliminary Dissertation.

Totell, the third day of February, An. 1557. Cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum." \*

1561. Thomas Hacket had license for a " dialogue of wyuyng and thryuyng of Tusshers, with ij lessons for olde and yonge." Ritson, though improperly, considers this as a different work from the piece which appears under the same title in later editions.

1562. It appears probable that this edition, though its existence is disputed by some, contained the original germ of the Book of Huswifery, as we find, on the authority of Warton, that in the preceding year Richard Totell had license to print " a booke entituled one hundreth good poyntes of husboundry lately maryed unto a hundreth good poyntes of huswifry, newly corrected and amplyfyed." †

1564. The existence of an edition of this date rests on the authority of Otridge's Catalogue, 1794. It is probably a misprint for 1562.

1570. " A hundreth good pointes of husbandry, lately

\* A copy of this first edition, probably unique, is preserved in the British Museum. It forms a small quarto, of thirteen leaves, and contains the author's Epistle to William Lord Page\*, and the Hundred Points of Husbandry, in 109 quatrains, divided irregularly in portions, for the twelve months, as in the standard editions, and commencing with August. The existence of this edition was denied by Ritson, according to Beloe, till it was pointed out to his notice by Mr. Park. A very small, but accurate reprint of this singular literary rarity has been given to the public in the British Bibliographer, 8vo. and some copies are taken off also on a quarto page.

† There is some evidence, though certainly inconclusive, for believing that the Book of Huswifery was originally printed by itself. See Register of the Stationers' Company. No copy of this date is known to be extant, though it is mentioned both in Weston's and King's Catalogue; and the existence of an edition of Tusser, of this date, (1562), seems to me to be unquestionable.

married unto a hundreth good poynts of huswifery : newly corrected and amplified, with dyuers proper lessons for householders, as by the table at the latter end, more plainly may appeare. Set forth by Thomas Tusser, gentleman, servant to the right honorable lorde Paget of Beudesert. In ædibus Richardi Tottyli, cum privilegio. Anno 1570." \*

1573. " Five hundreth points of good husbandry united to as many of good huswifery, first devised and nowe lately augmented, with diverse approved lessons, concerning hopps and gardening and other needeful matters, together with an abstract before every moneth, containing the whole effect of the sayd moneth, with a table and a preface in the beginning, both necessary to be reade, for the better understanding of the booke. Set forth by Thomas Tusser, gentleman, servant to the honorable lorde Paget of Beudesert. Imprinted at London in Flete strete within Temple barre, at the signe of the hand and starre, by Rychard Tottell. Anno 1573. Cum privilegio." †

1577. A reprint of the above, by the same person ‡.

\* Mr. Park, who had this copy in his possession lately, and considers it to be no less rare than the edition of 1557, favoured me with the particulars of its contents, which essentially differ from the preceding as well as the subsequent editions, containing more than the former, and less than the latter.

† This is the first edition of " Five Hundred Points," &c. A copy *penes me*, belonging to Richard Heber, Esq. has been generally compared and collated with the editions of 1580 and 1585. Of this rare book, Arthur Young, Esq. has or had a copy, and likewise the late Rev. G. Ashby. It contains in all ninety-eight folios, and six and a half quatrains in a page ; but the additions and alterations are so numerous in the standard edition of 1580, that this is rather curious than useful.

‡ " I am in possession of Ed. 1577 also ; but it is, *ipso facto*, a reprint of Ed. 1573, page for page." Extract of a letter from R. Heber, Esq.



## Preliminary Dissertation.

1580. " Five hundred pointes of good husbandrie, as well for the champion or open country, as also for the woodland, or severall, mixed in everie month with huswiferie, over and besides the booke of huswiferie, corrected, better ordered, and newly augmented to a fourth part more, with divers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of winds, planets, hops, herbes, bees, and approved remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable, and not unpleasant for the reader. Also a table of husbandrie at the beginning of this booke; and another of huswiferie at the end: for the better and easier finding of any matter contained in the same. Newly set foorth by Thomas Tusser, gentleman, servant to the honorable Lorde Paget of Beaudesert. Imprinted at London, by Henrie Denham, dwelling in Paternoster Row, at the signe of the starre: 1580." \*

1585. " Five hundreth pointes," &c. " Newly set foorth by Thomas Tusser, gentleman. At London, printed in the now dwelling house of Henrie Denham, in Aldersgate street, at the signe of the starre." †

1586. By Denham, as before ‡.

\* In a colophon " imprinted," as stated in the title, with the addition of " being the assignee of William Serres." This is the first complete edition of Tusser, and the last that was printed in his life-time. *Penes me*—the property of R. Heber, Esq. Title in a Gothic border, the same as is used in the next edition, but different from that of 1573.

† *Penes me*, &c. Very little differing from the preceding edition, as will appear from the variations, which are minutely marked in these two standard editions. It is probable that Tusser might have left, before his death, some corrections on the edition of 1580, which were introduced into this. After this edition, errors seem to have been multiplied in every successive impression, till the very sense was obscured or lost.

‡ If I may hazard a conjecture, perhaps Tusser did not die till about

1590. By the Assignees of Serres \*.

1593. By Yardley †.

1597. By Peter Short ‡.

1599. Again by Peter Short. Also by Waldegrave in Scotland §.

1604. Printed for the Companie of Stationers. I give the title at length, in order that some variations in orthography, and even in the sense, as *plants* for *planets*, may be observed and compared. “ Five hundreth pointes of good husbandrie : as well for the Champion or open countrie, as also for the Woodland or Severall, mixed in every Month with Huswiferie, over and besides the booke of Huswiferie. Corrected, better ordered, and newly augmented to a fourth part more, with divers other lessons, as a diet for the farmer, of the properties of winds, plants, hops, herbs, bees, and approved remedies for sheepe and cattell, with manie other matters both profitable and not unpleasant for the Reader. Also two tables, one of husbandrie, and the other of Huswiferie, at the end of the booke ; for the better and easier finding of any matter contained in the same. Newlie set foorth by Thomas Tusser, Gentleman.” &c. ||

---

1585, instead of 1580. Two editions of his work in two following years seem to attest that he was recently removed from the stage of life, and that envy which attends living worth, was now converted into admiration.

\* This edition I have never seen. It is noticed in White's Catalogue for 1788 ; and Mr. Ashby mentions having seen a copy in the possession of Dr. Lort.

† A copy of this edition,—and the only copy of any !—is to be found in the Bodleian Library. It is far from being correct or valuable.

‡ *Penes me.*

§ This edition by Short, which is extremely incorrect, is foisted into a late edition of the Somers' Tracts, under the reign of James I.

|| *Penes me.* Formerly belonged to the Rev. Mr. Ashby, who collated it with the edition of 1573, and wrote some observations on the work, on the

## Preliminary Dissertation.

1610. Printed for the Company of Stationers \*.
1614. Printed for the Company of Stationers †.
1620. Printed for the Company of Stationers. The orthography in the title in some respects more obsolete than in earlier impressions: thus we have *moneth* for *month*, and *hearbs* for *herbs* ‡.
1638. For the Company of Stationers §.
1672. Printed by T. R. and M. D. for the Company of Stationers. 146 pp. exclusive of the tables, closely printed ||.
1692. Bibliotheca Farmeriana, No. 7349. Haslewood ¶. *All the foregoing editions are in small 4to. black letter.*
1710. Tusser Redivivus. The Calendar of the twelve months with notes, published in as many numbers, by Daniel Hilman, a Surveyor of Epsom in Surry, 8vo. pp. 150 \*\*.

two fly-leaves. Sense often perverted. Public Library, Cambridge, and Royal Lib.

\* An edition little known or valued, but certainly existing.

† This edition not noticed by Mr. Haslewood. I have a copy, wanting the title, which I suspect to be of this date. “Vidi at Deck’s.” Ashby.

‡ *Penes me.* The property of the Rev. Dr. Rawbone, F. A. S. Little known.

§ Payne’s Catalogue, 1773. Deck’s, 1792. Little known. An edition of 1650 has been mentioned, but apparently on no sufficient grounds.

|| *Penes me.* In this edition some few errors are corrected, which had been continued in several preceding ones, and the orthography is considerably modernized.

¶ I greatly suspect this to be a misprint for 1672, as no other notice of such an edition is to be found.

\*\* Though Hilman is far from being an infallible guide, had he written notes on the whole of Tusser’s work, the labour of the present editor would have been considerably diminished. As for the notes by Gabriel Harvey, the cotemporary of Spenser, on a copy in the possession of Mr. Heber, to use the words of that gentleman, “though not unamusing to turn over, they

1744. The same, with a new Title-page only. Printed for M. Cooper in Paternoster Row ; and sold by J. Duncan, in Berkley Square, near Grosvenor Gate. The title runs thus : “ Five hundred points of Husbandry : directing what grass, corn, &c. is proper to be sown ; what trees to be planted ; how land is to be improved ; with whatever is fit to be done for the benefit of the FARMER, in every month of the YEAR. By Thomas Tusser, Esq. To which are added notes and observations, explaining many obsolete TERMS used therein, and what is agreeable to the present practice in several counties of this kingdom. A work very necessary and useful for gentlemen, as well as occupiers of land, whether wood-ground or tillage and pasture.”

---

After this enumeration of editions, before I proceed to explain the rules which I prescribed to myself in preparing the present, I wish to introduce some characters of the work by other writers, which will have their deserved weight with my readers, and evince my own impartiality.

“ As Hesiod writ learnedly of Husbandry in Greeke, so hath Tusser very wittily and experimentally written of it in English.”—*Wit's Academy, a Treasurie of Goulden Similies and Examples.* Lond. 1634.

---

can afford no real illustration worth imparting, in the new edition of Tusser's Husbandry.” That the edition of 1744 is the same with 1710, is evident from several copies of the former in my possession, sewed only, and some uncut, which have the title printed on a single leaf. “ Hilman's work is digested into such parts only, as are applicable to each month, and contains a regular intermixture of Tusser's quatrains, with a prose commentary by the author.”—*Censura Literaria*, Vol. ii. p. 186.

## Preliminary Dissertation.

“ Whose works,” speaking of Tusser, “ in my fancie, without any presumption, compare with any of the Varros, Columellas, or Palladios of Rome.”—*Googe’s Preface to his Translation of Heresbach*, p. 33.

“ As for Master Tusser, who rimeth out of his experience, if thou delightest therein, thou mayst find things worthy thy observation.”—*The English Improver, or a New Survey of Husbandry*, by *Walter Blith*. Lond. 1649.

“ He that hath little, and spendeth much, is called a prodigall foole, he that hath much and spendeth little, a miserable carll, but he that can moderate his expences according to abilitie, is wise. Measure is called a merry meane, liberalitie is a vertue, consisting to spend, not as a man would, but as he may. A thinne spare diet, is most holesome for health, and profitable for wealth. I like M. Tusser’s allowance.

Two dishes well dressed, and welcome withall,  
Both pleaseth thy friend, and becometh thy hall :  
Much spice is a thief, so is candle and fier,  
Sweet sauce is as crafty, as ever was friar.”

*A Display of Dutie, deckt with sage sayings, &c. by L[eonard] Wright. 1602\*.*

“ Thomas Tusser,” says Fuller, in his *Worthies of Essex*, p. 334. “ was successively a musician, school-

---

\* The same author gives another quotation from Tusser, in his delineation of a false friend, respecting whom the old agricultural bard says,

His fetch is to flatter, to catch what he can,  
His purpose obtained, a fig for thee than.



master, serving man, husbandman, grazier, poet, more skilful in all than thriving in any vocation. He traded at large in oxen, sheep, dairies, grain of all kinds, to no profit. Whether he bought or sold, he lost, and when a renter impoverished himself, and never enriched his landlord. Yet hath he laid down excellent rules in his book of Husbandry and Huswifery (so that the observer thereof must be rich) in his own defence. He spread his bread with all sorts of butter, yet none would stick thereon. Yet I hear no man to charge him with any vicious extravagancy, or visible carelessness, imputing his ill success to some occult cause in God's counsel. Thus our English Columella might say with the poet,

Monitis sum minor ipse meis,

None being better at theory, or worse at the practice of Husbandry. I match him with Thomas Churchyard, they being marked alike in their poetical parts, living in the same time, and statured alike in their estates, both low enough I assure you. I cannot find the certain date of his death, but collect it to be about 1580\*."

Lord Molesworth, in his "*Considerations for promoting Agriculture*, 1723," says "As to agriculture, I should humbly propose, that a school for husbandry were erected in every county, wherein an expert master of the methods of agriculture should teach, at a fixed yearly salary; and that TUSSEY's old Book of Husbandry should be taught to the boys to read, to copy, and to get by heart, to which end it might be reprinted and distributed. I doubt not but that

---

\* From a review of the whole, I am inclined to believe it was later by perhaps two or three years.

## Preliminary Dissertation.

some such method as this would make husbandmen, and prevent the increase of the poor \*."

In addition to this very partial recommendation, Harte, in his "*Husbandry*," observes, " Lord Molesworth's idea is a very good one, but the poem is very obsolete, and of course too hard to be understood by children, or even grown persons†, being published before the year 1577. Some may think it too long, for it contains more verses than Virgil's *Georgics*."

" The life of this poor man, Tusser, was a series of misfortunes; and is a proof of the truth of that saying in Holy Scripture, That the battle is not to the strong nor the race to the swift. As to the *Five Hundred Points of Husbandry*, it is written in familiar verse, and abounds with many curious particulars, that bespeak the manners, the customs, and modes of living in the country, from the year 1520 to about half a century after; besides which, it discovers such a degree of œconomical wisdom in the author, such a sedulous attention to the honest arts of thriving, such a general love of mankind, such a regard to justice, and a reverence for religion, that we do not only lament his misfortunes, but wonder at them; and are at a loss to account for his dying poor, who understood so well the me-

---

\* Happy should I be to find that my labours have in any degree contributed to realize the speculations of Lord Molesworth.

† I by no means subscribe generally to this opinion. That Tusser contains many obsolete phrases is certain; but his black letter dress, and his uncouth orthography, have presented more difficulties to common readers than his style. Many of his terms at this time would be better understood by farmers than by scholars, notwithstanding the prevailing taste for old English works.

thod to become rich.”—*Hawkins’s Hist. of Music. vol. 3. b. iv. c. 5.*

Ritson observes, in his *Bibliographia Poetica*, p. 372. among other notices of our author, that “ in Tusser’s very curious and original productions, may be traced the popular stanza, which attained so much celebrity in the pastoral ballads of Shenstone.”

“ It must be acknowledged,” says Warton, “ that this old English Georgic has much more of the simplicity of Hesiod, than of the elegance of Virgil; and a modern reader would suspect, that many of its salutary maxims originally decorated the margins, and illustrated the calendars of an ancient almanac. It is without invocations, digressions, and descriptions: no pleasing pictures of rural imagery are drawn from meadows covered with flocks, and fields waving with corn, nor are Pan and Ceres once named. Yet it is valuable as a genuine picture of the agriculture, the rural arts, and the domestic œconomy and customs of our industrious ancestors. A great variety of verse is used in this poem, which is thrown into numerous detached chapters. The Husbandry is divided into several months. Tusser, in respect of his antiquated diction, and his argument, may not improperly be styled the British Varro. Such,” continues he, “ were the rude beginnings in the English language of didactic poetry, which, on a kindred subject, the present age has seen brought to perfection, by the happy combination of judicious precepts with the most elegant ornaments of language and imagery, in Mr. Mason’s *English Garden* \*.”

---

\* For the personal kindness of Warton to me, at an early period of life, I shall ever retain an affectionate remembrance of him, and for his genius and

## Preliminary Dissertation.

In another place Mr. Warton observes, "our author's general precepts have often an expressive brevity, and are sometimes pointed with an epigrammatic turn, and smartness of allusion;" and of this he produces several instances.

With the observations of the amiable and intelligent Stillingfleet, in his "Memoranda for a History of Husbandry \*," I shall conclude these critical notices on Tusser. They are more valuable than all the rest, and are given with little abridgment.

"Tusser," says Stillingfleet, "who flourished in the reign of Henry VIII. and Elizabeth, was a gentleman and a practical farmer, and gave to the public the result of his labours and knowledge, in a whimsical treatise in verse, intitled, 'Five Hundred Points of good Husbandry, united to as many of good Huswifery,' &c. He wrote from practice, which appears as well from the account of his life, as from his Book on Husbandry; for he does not mention any of

---

high attainments in literature I feel all that deference and respect, which can belong to his most enthusiastic admirers; but no man was less a judge of the merits of a book on Husbandry or Huswifery; and it is evident he had never read more than detached parts, or he would not have asserted that Pan and Ceres were not once named. But had Pan, and Ceres, and Pomona, been more frequently introduced, it is probable the work would not have passed through so many editions; and, in this respect, the fairest touchstone of works intended for public practice and benefit! it does not seem probable that the English Garden of Mason, elegant as it is, will ever equal him. The lapse, indeed, of as many years as have intervened since Tusser wrote, may possibly render the language of Mason equally obsolete; for a new phraseology is constantly innovating on our vernacular tongue; and Pope seems to have been inspired with a prophetic spirit, when he observed, that "Such as Chaucer is, shall Dryden be."

\* See "Literary Life and Select Works of Benjamin Stillingfleet, by Mr. Coxe." Vol. II. part ii. p. 563.

those articles which we see in some of the earliest treatises, as well as the latter; namely, cytissus, lupines, chiches, sesamum, fenugreek, none of which were perhaps then cultivated in this country, but described from Varro or Columella, or at second hand from Pliny.”

“ He seems to have been a good-natured chearful man, and though a lover of œconomy, far from meanness, as appears in many of his precepts, wherein he shews his disapprobation of that pitiful spirit, which makes farmers starve their cattle, their land, and every thing belonging to them; chusing rather to lose a pound than spend a shilling. Upon the whole, his book displays all the qualities of a well-disposed man, as well as of an able farmer.”

“ He wrote in the infancy of farming; and therefore I shall give a full account of his practice, especially as his precepts will be comprised in a narrow compass, and as a sort of justice done to him as an original writer. He throws his precepts into a calendar, and gives many good rules in general, both in relation to agriculture and œconomy; and had he not written in miserable hobbling\* and obscure verse, might have rendered more service to his countrymen. However, he must have been useful, by diffusing over the kingdom that knowledge which he had gained by living in Suffolk and Essex, where farming was at that time best understood; for he observes that enclosing was more common in those countries than elsewhere; and it is a certain truth, that nothing more improves agricultural

---

\* The late Mr. Ansty, in his Bath Guide, and various other approved writers, have legitimated and familiarized the measure generally used by Tusser. From its structure, it is, perhaps, more easily remembered than any other.



## Preliminary Dissertation.

skill than enclosures ; or rather, enclosing is the consequence of skill \*.

### CALENDAR OF TUSSER.

#### JANUARY.

“ Dung, sow pease, make quickset, gather browse for cattle, fill up holes in pasture, sow oats, break fallow or lay, sow barley or oats upon lay.

#### FEBRUARY.

“ Plough in stubble, sow rounceval pease and beans, harrow in pease, pease and beans under-furrow, dung pasture.

#### MARCH.

“ Sow white pease, shut in meadows, sow barley, harrow barley fine, roll barley, harrow oats, barley, and pease, after sowing ; wheat under clods best, roll wheat.

#### APRIL.

“ In Cambridge and Lincolnshire, in open lands, they fallow in May. He advises to fallow in April, and spread dung.

#### MAY.

“ Eat with sheep, weed corn, and sow buck, weed wheat and banks, drain, fallow land, dung, gather stones.

---

\* “ The author lived the greatest part of his time in Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex ; in the two former there is much cattle reared at present, the latter is much altered from what they did formerly, by suckling of calves, and housing of lambs, and taking in of commons.”—*Censura Literaria*, Vol. II. page 186.

## JUNE.

“ Mow, plough, cut bushes and brambles, clean ditches.

## JULY.

“ Make hay and thrifallow on enclosed land.

## AUGUST.

“ Cut wheat, pease, keep from ploughing till Michaelmas, carry dung, thresh for seed, dung.

## SEPTEMBER.

“ Thresh and sow rye, sow white wheat, set children to fright away birds, mend banks\*.

## OCTOBER.

“ Lay up barley land, dry, sow red wheat. Do not over-dung. Account of different kinds of wheat. Oats, wheat, grass, barley, rye, impoverish. One crop after another bad. Pease and brank between do good. Three crops allowed on enclosed ground. A good fallow for barley, next pease, next wheat, then fallow, and lay down. In open land, first rye, then barley, or wheat before barley; but in Middlesex, barley, wheat, then lay down, or dung and fallow for plough. Barley after rye or wheat, not unless on rich land. Beans and pease between rye or wheat and barley. Two crops of a fallow is well; one crop and a fal-

---

\* “ In the Calendar for this month, Tusser takes up no less than eighty-four lines in his account of husbandry implements, and these lines consist of mere names tacked together, with scarcely an epithet that is not necessary. He likewise recommends, like Hesiod, the farmer to provide himself with a double set of the most necessary implements, to prevent any suspension of his work by accident.”

## Preliminary Dissertation.

low tolerable. After pease, wheat without dung. New broken land, or wet, or over dunged, not good for wheat. Wet land best for oats, grey pease, rouncevals, and tares.

### NOVEMBER.

“ Thresh barley for malt, sow pease, hastings, rouncevals, at Candlemas thresh. N. B. The benefit of soot not known.

### DECEMBER.

“ Give the cattle first rye-straw, then wheat and pease, then oats, and lastly, barley-straw. If you give hay they will not touch straw. Some use vetches instead of hay.

### OBSERVATIONS ON THIS CALENDAR.

“ I question whether breaking fallow in January, and sowing oats in February, would be now approved by any of our farmers. Tusser mentions nothing of marl, chalk, or lime, or mixture of soils\*, those great improvements in agriculture known to Theophrastus, and practised by other nations, particularly of marl†, the use of which was known in England for many ages, but lost by the political madness of our ancestors. He says nothing also of turnips, clover, rape, rye-grass, or lucern, though known to Turner; nor of folding sheep‡. He seems, however, to have well understood the management of barley and wheat, for he reared both, in places where they had never been sown before.

---

\* In this I think Stillingfleet is mistaken. Tusser frequently mentions *compas*, which can only mean compost, or a mixture of soil and dung.

† Markham mentions marling as being much used in Kent; and, indeed, it appears to have been known as a manure before the time of Edward II.

‡ This is palpably wrong. See May's Husbandry, V. 2. and note 2.

## FOR OPEN LAND.

“ The course of husbandry, as far as I can comprehend it, is thus : A good fallow, wheat, or rye, barley. But barley after wheat not right, unless on rich land ; otherwise pease or beans should come between. In Middlesex, barley, wheat, then lay down, or dung, or fallow and plough, that is, two crops in three years, if they did not lay down. For how many years they laid down he does not say, nor with what, though I suppose with hay seeds ; if so, it must be for several years, if they reaped any benefit from it. Two crops off a fallow he says is well ; one tolerable ; that is, two crops in four years\*.

## ENCLOSED LAND.

“ A good fallow ; barley, pease, or brank, wheat, fallow—that is, three crops in four years.

“ Tusser mentions the disturbances in his time about enclosures, which he approves of.

“ Much has been written on enclosures, both in this country and in others ; and the question has excited a great diversity of opinion. Some say that it depopulates a country, which is certain, if all or much was to be turned to grass ; but this will depend on the nature of the soil enclosed. If it is rich, no doubt a prudent farmer will turn to grazing, as in Gloucestershire and Suffolk ; otherwise to ploughing, in the Norfolk way ; in which case enclosures, so far from diminishing the want of labourers, will increase work. For example, we see on the side of London towards the south, where all is enclosed, there is scarcely any pasture, unless near Chelsea, and the land produces a

---

\* Nothing can more clearly shew the low state of agriculture than this.

## Preliminary Dissertation.

crop every year. On the other hand, Suttonfield, in Hol-  
derness, consisting of as rich land as any in the kingdom,  
lies fallow every other year ; but even so, it employs more  
hands than it would if turned to meadow. So that the  
question cannot be decided in the general and vague way  
in which it is treated, whether enclosing depopulates or  
not? There is a method too commonly practised in this  
kingdom, which does worse than depopulate,—it makes  
provisions dear ; this is, to take a few crops from the  
Downs, for the mean avarice of a little present profit, and  
when they are no longer worth sowing, to leave them al-  
most waste for twenty years.

“ Googe \* set Tusser on a level with Varro and Columella  
and Palladius ; but I would rather compare him to old  
Hesiod. They both wrote in the infancy of husbandry ;  
both gave good general precepts, without entering into the  
detail, though Tusser has more of it than Hesiod ; they  
both seem as desirous to improve the morals of their readers  
as well as their farms, by recommending industry and  
œconomy ; and that which perhaps may be looked upon  
as the greatest resemblance, they both wrote in verse, pro-  
bably for the same reason, namely, to propagate their doc-  
trines more effectually.”

---

\* See among the preceding critical notices of Tusser.

---



## PLAN OF THIS EDITION.

---

I. THE editions of 1573, 1580, and 1585, have been collated, and the variations marked by the letters (*a*), (*b*), (*c*), according to the order of their dates. The two last may be considered as the only standard and perfect editions.

II. The text of the edition of 1580, as being incomparably the most correct, has been commonly followed, except where a better reading, or evident oversights, corrected in the edition of 1585, or some subsequent one, have warranted a deviation.

III. The punctuation, which is uniformly vicious, and in many instances obscured the sense, has been reformed, as far as was thought necessary. In some cases, however, where the pointing, after the manner of the prose versions of the psalms, makes an irregular but impressive pause, without affecting the meaning, I have not wholly altered it.

IV. The apostrophe and cæsura have been introduced, according to modern usage.

V. The orthography, which in all the editions is fluctuating and uncertain, and even varies in the same page, though that of 1580 is less obsolete than the following ones, (and the edition of 1573, in some respects, still less than the former), where it does not affect the rhyme or the measure, has been reduced in a great measure to the modern standard \*; preserving, however, a little of that Do-

---

\* On this subject, though supported by the highest authorities, I shall have perhaps to combat the opinions and prejudices of the affected ad-

## Plan of this Edition.

ric character which suits the composition, and which was sometimes indispensable, from the words themselves.

VI. The explanatory notes have been drawn up, with all the attention and research of which I was capable, unless I could have dedicated years to the undertaking, and at last made the work too bulky and too expensive to be read.

VII. The GLOSSARY has been framed from the best authorities, and from a careful regard to the context, when the words or phrases were particularly obscure. And, if the commentators on Shakspeare, who have been so numerous and so well qualified to illustrate his immortal productions, are still far from being united in their explanations, it need not be wondered at, if lapses occur in this work, the labour of an individual, except as far as I have acknowledged obligation, and some assistance, in one part of the work, derived from Hilman.

*Quod potui feci, faciant meliora potentes.*

---

mirers of old English literature, more than any other class of men. But I did not devote my labours to them, nor shall I ever dig in the antiquarian mine for the dross, but for the ore. Tusser, with every advantage I was able to give him, is sufficiently difficult for common readers; and it was for practical uses, and not merely as an object of curiosity, that he has again seen the light, after the lapse of 140 years since the last complete edition. Those who delight in antiquated and anomalous orthography, such as *foorth* for *forth*, *hundreth* for *hundred*, *doo* for *do*, *maister* for *master*, *looving* for *loving*, *husbandrie* for *husbandry*, *hir* for *her*, &c. &c. &c. may easily fancy the picture they admire, which certainly would have few charms for the readers whom I wish to profit as well as please.

---

✚ A LESSON how to confer every ABSTRACT

with his MONTH, and how to find

out HUSWIFERY Verses by the

*Pilcrow*, and CHAMPION

from WOODLAND<sup>1</sup>.

---

IN every Month, ere in aught be begun,  
Read over that month what avails to be done;  
So neither this travell may seem to be lost,  
Nor thou to repent of this trifeling (c) cost.

The figure of Abstract and Month do agree,  
Which one to another relations be :  
These Verses so short, without figure that stand,  
Be points of themselves, to be taken in hand.

---

VARIATION.

(c) trifling.

---

<sup>1</sup> The author's distinctions between *Champion*, or open Field, and *Several*, or enclosed Land, are sufficiently obvious. To the latter he has referred *Woodland*, or rather has

used the term to express the same thing. In certain stages of the growth of wood at least, it must always have been fenced, in order to protect it from cattle.

## A Lesson, &c.

¶ In Husbandry matters, where *Pilcrow*<sup>1</sup> ye find,  
That Verse appertaineth to Huswif'ry kind ;  
So have ye more lessons, if there ye look well,  
Than Huswifery Book doth utter or tell.

Of Champion Husbandry<sup>2</sup> now do I write,  
Which heretofore never this book did recite ;  
With lessons approved, by practise and skill,  
To profit the ignorant, buy it that will.

The Champion differs from Severall much,  
For want of partition, closiër, and such :  
One name to them both do I give now and than,  
For Champion country, and Champion man.

<sup>1</sup> The *Pilcrow* or paragraph, wherever it appears in the margin, indicates, as we are plainly told, that something relative to Huswifery is introduced.

<sup>2</sup> In the edition of 1573 and the following ones, it is said in the title-page, " Corrected, better ordered,

and newly augmented to a fourth part more," &c. See *TITLE* at length in the preliminary dissertation. The preceding editions of course wanted *Champion Husbandry*, and many other particulars, which the author has taken care to enumerate.

¶ The Author's Epistle to the late Lord William Paget <sup>1</sup>,  
wherein he doth discourse of his own bringing up, and of the  
goodness of the said Lord his Master unto him, and the  
occasion of this his Book, thus set forth of  
his own long Practise.

---

---

## CHAP. I.

¶ TIME tries the troth in every thing ;  
¶ Herewith let men content their mind,  
o Of works which best may (a) profit bring,  
m Most rash to judge, most often blind.  
e As therefore troth in time shall crave,  
s So let this book just favor have.

¶ Take you, my Lord and Master, than  
n Unless mischance mischanceth me,  
s Such homely gift of me your man,  
s Since more in court I may not be.  
e And let your praise won heretofore,  
a Remain abroad for evermore.

m My serving you, thus (c) understand,  
e And God his help, and yours withall,  
o Did cause good luck to take mine hand,  
e Erecting one, most like to fall.

m My serving you, I know it was,  
e Enforced this to come to pass.

---

### VARIATIONS.

(a) way.

(c) this.



## The Author's Epistle.

SINCE being once at Cambridge taught,  
Of court, ten years, I made assay ;  
No musick then was left unsaught,  
Such care I had to serve that way,  
When joy 'gan slake, then made I change,  
Expelled (*b*) mirth for musick strange.

My musick since hath been the plough,  
Intangled with some care among ;  
The gain not great, the pain enough,  
Hath made me sing another song.  
Which song, if well I may avow,  
I crave it judged be by you.

Your Servant, THOMAS TUSSER <sup>1</sup>.

---

### VARIATION.

(*b*) Expulsed.

---

<sup>1</sup> In the title-page of the edition of 1580, printed the year of his death, Tusser styles himself " Servant to the Honorable Lord Paget, of Beaudesert ; " which designation is omitted in the next edition, 1585. We are not, however, to understand that he was a menial servant, but only a retainer ; of whom persons of

rank, in those days, kept a number proportioned to their opulence, or their love of ostentation.

<sup>2</sup> It may be worthy of remark, that though in the preceding acrostical lines, the author makes his name Tussar, he constantly signs it Tusser. On this occasion, an *a* probably suited the composition best.

## The Author's Epistle.

v

¶ To the Right Honorable and my speciall good  
Lord and Master, the Lord Thomas Paget of Beaudesert,  
Son and Heir to his late Father deceased.

---

### CHAP. II.

My Lord, your father loved me  
And you, my Lord, have proved me,  
And both your loves have moved me,  
To write, as here is done.  
Since God hath hence your father,  
Such flowers as I gather  
I dedicate now rather  
To you, my Lord, his son.

Your father was my founder,  
Till death became his wounder,  
No subject ever sounder,  
Whom prince advancement gave :  
As God did here defend him,  
And honor here did send him,  
So will I here commend him,  
As long as life I have.

His neighbours then did bless him,  
His servants now do miss him,  
The poor would gladly kiss him,  
Alive again to be ;  
But God hath wrought his pleasure,  
And blest him out of measure,  
With heaven and earthly treasure,  
So good a God is he.

## The Author's Epistle.

His counsell had I used,  
 And CERES' art refused,  
 I need not thus have mused,  
     Nor droop, as now I do :  
 But I must play the farmer,  
 And yet no whit the warmer,  
 Although I had his armer,  
     And other comfort too.

Æsop's Fable.

The fox doth make me mind him,  
 Whose glory so did blind him,  
 Till tail cut off behind him,  
     No fare could him content  
 Even so must I be proving,  
 Such glory I had in loving  
 Of things to plough behoving,  
     That makes me now repent.

Salust.

Loiterers I kept so meany,  
 Both Philip, Hob, and Cheany,  
 That, that way nothing geany <sup>1</sup>,  
     Was thought to make me thrive :  
 Like *Jugurth*, prince of *Numid*,  
 My gold away consumed,  
 With losses so perfumed,  
     Was never none alive.

Great fines so near did pare me,  
 Great rent so much did scare me,  
 Great charge so near did dare me,

---

<sup>1</sup> Though the spelling is evidently sacrificed to the rhyme in this triad, the author's meaning is, " he kept so many servants that he had no gains left for himself; or was nothing gainful.

That made me at length cry creak :  
 Much more of all such fleeces,  
 As oft I lost by pieces,<sup>1</sup>  
 Among such wily geeses,  
 I list no longer speak.

Though country health long staid me,  
 Yet lease expiring fraid me,  
 And (*ictus sapit*) pray'd me,  
 To seek more steady stay.  
 New lessons then I noted,  
 And some of them I quoted,  
 Lest some should think I doted,  
 By bringing naught away.

Though PALLAS hath deny'd me,  
 Her learned pen to guide me,  
 For that she daily spy'd me,  
 With country how I stood ;  
 Yet CERES so did bold me,  
 With her good lessons told me,  
 That rudeness cannot hold me,  
 From doing country good.

Pallas, Goddess of Wisdom and Cunning.

By practise and ill speeding,  
 These lessons had their breeding,  
 And not by hearsay or reading,  
 As some abroad have blown ;  
 Who will not thus believe me,  
 So much the more they grieve me,  
 Because they grudge to give me,  
 What is of right mine own <sup>1</sup>.

---

<sup>1</sup> In all ages it seems to have been a practice too common, for envy to tarnish the fair fame of writers ; and if it was impossible to

## The Author's Epistle.

At first for want of teaching,  
 At first for trifles breaching,  
 At first for over-reaching,  
     And lack of taking heed,  
 Was cause that toil (c) so tost me,  
 That practise so much cost me,  
 That rashness so much lost me,  
     Or hindred as it did.

Yet will I not despair,  
 Through God's good gift so fair,  
 Through friendship, gold, and prayer,  
     In country again to dwell :  
 Where rent, so shall not pain me,  
 But pains shall help to gain me,  
 And gains shall help maintain me,  
     New lessons more to tell.

For city seems a wringer <sup>1</sup>,  
 The penny for to finger,  
 From such as there do linger,  
     Or for their pleasure lie.

---

### VARIATION.

(c) toss.

---

deny the merit of their works, to raise suspicions of their originality. Tusser, however, evidently wrote from his own observations and feelings, with a *naïveté* peculiarly his own.

<sup>1</sup> He probably alludes to London

or Norwich, or perhaps draws a general contrast between town and country. Like all other poets he praises the latter ; but seems to have been unsuccessful every where. See the *Author's Life*, written by himself, at the end of this volume.



## The Author's Epistle.

ix

Though country be more painfull,  
And not so greedy gainfull ;  
Yet is it not so vainfull,  
In following fancy's eye.

I have no labour wanted,  
To prune this tree, thus planted,  
Whose fruit to none is scanted,  
In house, or yet in field :  
Which fruit, the more ye taste of,  
The more to eat, ye haste of,  
The less this fruit ye waste of ;  
Such fruit this tree doth yield.

My (a) tree or book thus framed  
With title already named,  
I trust goes forth, unblamed,  
In your good Lordship's name ;  
As my good Lord I take you,  
And never will forsake you,  
So now I crave to make you  
Defender of the same.

Your servant,

THOMAS TUSSER.

---

VARIATION.

(a) This.

# TO THE READER.

## CHAP. III.

I HAVE been pray'd  
 To shew mine aid,  
 In taking pain,  
 Not for the gain,  
 But for good will,  
 To shew such skill,  
     As shew I could ;  
 That husbandry  
 With huswifery,  
 As cock and hen,  
 To countrymen,  
 All strangeness gone,  
 Might join in one,  
     As lovers should.

I trust both this  
 Performed is,  
 And how that here,  
 It shall appear,  
 With judgment right  
 To thy delight,  
     Is brought to pass ;

That such as wive,  
 And fain would thrive,  
 Be plainly taught,  
 How good from naught  
 May trim be try'd  
 And lively spy'd,  
     As in a glass.

What should I win,  
 By writing in  
 My losses past,  
 That ran as fast  
 As running stream,  
 From ream to ream,  
     That flows so swift ?  
 For that I could (c)  
 Not get for gould (c),  
 To teach me how,  
 As this doth you,  
 Through daily gain,  
 The way so plain,  
     To come by thrift.

## VARIATIONS.

(c) Cold.

(c) Gold ; the reader may take his option.

## To the Reader.

xi

What is a groat <sup>1</sup>  
Or twain to note,  
Once in the life,  
For man or wife,  
To save a pound,  
In house or ground,  
Each other week?  
What more for health,  
What more for wealth,  
What needeth less,  
Run, *Jack*, help *Bess*  
To stay amiss,  
Not having this  
Far off to seek?

I do not crave  
More thanks to have,  
Than given to me  
Already be;  
But this is all  
To such as shall  
Peruse this book;—  
That for my sake  
They gently take  
Whate'er (*b c*) they find,  
Against their mind,

When he or she  
Shall minded be,  
Therein to look.

And grant me now,  
Good (*b c*) reader, thou!  
Of terms to use.  
Such choice to chuse,  
As may delight  
The country wight,  
And knowledge bring:  
For such do praise  
The country phrase,  
The country acts,  
The country facts,  
The country toys,  
Before the joys,  
Of any thing.

Nor look thou here,  
That every share  
Of every verse,  
I thus rehearse,  
May profit take,  
Or vantage make  
By lessons such;

---

### VARIATIONS.

(*b c*) Where'er.

(*b c*) Thou, reader, thou.

---

<sup>1</sup> If the poet speaks literally, and not metaphorically, the price of his book, in "the golden days of good Queen Bess," was only a groat, or two at the utmost; and a cheap

purchase it was, though perhaps sufficiently profitable to the bookseller. We have lately heard of several guineas having been given for an early copy!

## To the Reader.

For, here we see,  
 Things severall be,  
 And there no dike,  
 But champion like,  
 And sandy soil,  
 And clayey toil,  
     Do suffer (a) much.  
 This being waid,  
 Be not afraid,  
 To buy to prove,  
 To read with love,

To follow some,  
 And so to come,  
     By practise true.  
 My pain is past  
 Thou warning hast,  
 Th' experience mine,  
 The vantage thine,  
 May give thee choice  
 To cry, or rejoice,—  
     And thus adieu !

FINIS.

T. TUSSER.

---

### VARIATIONS.

(a) Differ, *which seems the best reading.*

---

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE BOOK  
OF HUSBANDRY <sup>1</sup>.

CHAP. IV.

Good husbandmen must moil and toil,  
To lay to live, by laboured field :  
Their wives, at home, must keep such coil,  
As their like acts may profit yield.

For well they know,  
As shaft from bow,  
Or chalk from snow,

A good round rent their lords they give,  
And must keep touch in all their pay <sup>2</sup> ;  
With credit crackt, else for to live,  
Or trust to legs, and run away.

Though fence, well kept, is one good point,  
And tilth well done, in season due ;  
Yet needing salve, in time t'anoint,  
Is all in all, and needfull true :

As for the rest,  
Thus think I best,  
As friend doth guest,

With hand in hand to lead thee forth,  
To CERES camp, there to behold  
A thousand things, as richly worth,  
As any pearl is worthy gold.

Ceres, God-  
dess of Hus-  
bandry.

<sup>1</sup> This introduction was first added to the edition of 1580. It is wanting in that of 1573, which, on the whole, however, is an excellent edition.

<sup>2</sup> *To keep touch*, is a proverbial form of expression for being punctual to engagements, particularly of a pecuniary nature.



# Preface.

## A PREFACE TO THE BUYER OF THIS BOOK<sup>1</sup>.

---

### CHAP. V.

WHAT lookest thou herein to have ?  
 Fine verses thy fancy to please ?  
 Of many my betters *that* crave :  
 Look nothing but rudeness in these.

What other thing lookest thou then ?  
 Grave sentences many to find ?  
 Such, poets have, twenty and ten,  
 Yea thousands, contenting thy mind.

What look ye, I pray you shew what ?  
 Terms painted with rhetorick fine ?  
 Good husbandry seeketh not that,  
 Nor is't any meaning of mine.

What lookest thou, speak at the last ?  
 Good lessons for thee and thy wife ?  
 Then keep them in memory fast,  
 To help as a comfort to life.

---

<sup>1</sup> It will be a novelty to many to find, that the peculiar metre of Shenstone, as it is supposed, had its prototype in Tusser. For smoothness of versification, and harmonious

cadences, this preface is equal to any thing that the 16th century produced. It forcibly reminds us of the bard of the Leasowes.

What look ye for more in my book ?  
Points needfull and meet to be known ?  
Then daily be sûer <sup>1</sup> to look,  
To save to be sûer thine own.

---

## THE COMMODITIES OF HUSBANDRY <sup>2</sup>.

---

### CHAP. VI.

*Let house have to fill her,  
Let land have to till her.*

No dwellers,—what profiteth house for to stand ?  
What goodness, unoccupied, bringeth the land ?  
*No labour, no bread,  
No host, we be dead.*

No husbandry used, how soon shall we sterve ?  
House-keeping neglected, what comfort to serve.  
*Ill father, no gift,  
No knowledge, no thrift,*

The father an unthrift, what hope for the son ?  
The ruler unskilfull, how quickly undone ?

---

<sup>1</sup> Sûer for *sure*, *fier* for *fire*, *tion* for *tion*, &c. are frequent expedients with our author, to eke out his lines. Indeed, these and similar words and terminations were often used as dissyllables by the old English poets. If we except, however, the early standard editions of Tusser, *sure* and *fire* are invariably printed, by which the line is made to limp. Though the

affectation of *aitches* for *aches*, in order to perfect the measure, is ridiculous or contemptible, an author ought not to be made responsible for faults which he has not committed.

<sup>2</sup> In “The Commodities of Husbandry,” we have some brief but impressive maxims, which highly deserve attention and regard.

## The Commodities of Husbandry.

## CHAP. VII.

*As true as thy faith,  
This riddle thus saith.*

The praise of  
husbandry.

I SEEM but a drudge, yet I pass any king,  
To such as can use me, great wealth I do bring.  
Since ADAM first lived, I never did die ;  
When NOE was a shipman, there also was I.  
The earth to sustain me, the sea for my fish <sup>1</sup>,  
Be ready to pleasure me, as I would wish.  
What hath any life, but I help to preserve ?  
What wight without me, but is ready to sterve ?  
In woodland, in champion, city, or town,  
If long I be absent, what falleth not down ?  
If long I be present, what goodness can want ?  
Though things, at my coming, were never so scant.  
So many as love me, and use me aright,  
With treasure and pleasure I richly requite.  
Great kings I do succour, else wrong it would go,  
The KING of all kings hath appointed it so.

---

<sup>1</sup> This riddle would be of no difficult solution, even without the marginal explanation. In line 5 the

author means that the sea is his *fish-pond*. See Ed. 1573.

---

# THE DESCRIPTION OF HUSBANDRY<sup>1</sup>.

---

## CHAP. VIII.

Or husband, doth husbandry challenge that name,  
Of husbandry, husband doth likewise the same :  
Where huswife and huswifery joineth with these,  
There, wealth in abundance is gotten with ease.

The name of a husband, what is it to say ?  
Of wife and the houshold, the band and the stay :  
Some husbandly thriveth that never had wife,  
Yet scarce a good husband in goodness of life.

The husband is he, that to labour doth fall,  
'The labour of him I do husbandry call :  
If thrift, by that labour, be any way caught,  
Then is it good husbandry, else it is naught.

So houshold and housholdry I do define,  
For folk and the goods, that in house be of thine :  
House-keeping to them, as a refuge is set,  
Which like as it is, so report it doth get.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tusser, as was the taste of his times, was fond of definitions and distinctions, else, one would suppose, this punning chapter might

have been spared. The two last quatrains, however, contain some just reflections.

## The Ladder to Thrift.

Be house or the furniture never so rude,  
Of husband and husbandry,—thus I conclude,  
That huswife and huswifery, if it be good,  
Must pleasure together, as cousins in blood.

---

### ¶ THE LADDER TO THRIFT †.

---

#### CHAP. IX.

1. To take thy calling thankfully,  
And shun the path to beggary.
  2. To grudge in youth no drudgery,  
To come by knowledge perfectly.
  3. To count no travell slavery,  
That brings in penny saverly.
  4. To follow profit, earnestly,  
But meddle not with pilfery.
  5. To get by honest practisy,  
And keep thy gettings covertly.
  6. To lash not out, too lashingly,  
For fear of pinching penury.
- 

<sup>†</sup> A commentary larger than the whole book might be written on “The Ladder to Thrift,” but, fortunately it does not require it. The maxims are so clear, so practical, and so useful, that they carry conviction of their truth; and no one can copy them into his life without feeling their advantage. In the thir-

ty-seventh, or last step of the ladder, as our author would have called it, he alludes to the then existing belief in witches; but piously advises, to seek help from God, and not to have recourse to the reputed agents of the devil. At least I conceive this to be his meaning.

## The Ladder to Thrift.

xix

7. To get good plot, to occupy,  
And store and use it, husbandly.
8. To shew to landlord courtesy,  
And keep thy covenants orderly.
9. To hold that thine is lawfully,  
For stoutness, or for flattery.
10. To wed good wife for company,  
And live in wedlock honestly.
11. To furnish house with housholdry,  
And make provision skilfully.
12. To join to wife good family,  
And none to keep for bravery.
13. To suffer none live idely,  
For fear of idle knavery.
14. To courage wife in huswifery,  
And use well doers gently.
15. To keep no more but needfully,  
And count excess unsavoury.
16. To raise betimes the lubberly,  
Both snorting *Hob* and *Margery*.
17. To walk thy pastures usually,  
To spy ill neighbour's subtilty.
18. To hate revengement hastily,  
For losing love and amity.
19. To love thy neighbour, neighbourly,  
And shew him no discourtesy.
20. To answer stranger (c) civilly,  
But shew him not thy secresy.

---

### VARIATION.

(c) strangers.



## The Ladder to Thrift.

21. To use no man deceitfully,  
To offer no man villainy.
22. To learn how foe to pacify,  
But trust him not too hastily.
23. To keep thy touch substantially,  
And in thy word use constancy.
24. To make thy bands advisedly,  
And come not bound through suerty.
25. To meddle not with usury,  
Nor lend thy money foolishly (*a*).
26. To hate to live in infamy,  
Through craft, and living shiftingly (*a*)
27. To shun all kind of treachery,  
For treason endeth, horribly.
28. To learn to shun (*b c*) ill company,  
And such as live dishonestly.
29. To banish house of blasphemy,  
Lest crosses cross, unluckily.
30. To stop mischance through policy,  
For chancing too unhappily.
31. To bear thy crosses, patiently,  
For worldly things are slippery.
32. To lay to keep from misery,  
Age coming on, so creepingly.
33. To pray to God, continually,  
For aid against thine enemy.
34. To spend thy Sabbath holily,  
And help the needy poverty.

---

### VARIATIONS.

- (*a*) 25. Not in this edition. (*a*) naughtily. (*b c*) t'eschew.  
The more modern editions have uniformly *to shun*, which we prefer.

35. To live in conscience quietly,  
And keep thyself from malady.

36. To ease thy sickness speedily,  
Ere help be past recovery.

37. To seek to God for remedy,  
For witches prove unluckily.

These be the steps, unfeignedly,  
To climb to thrift by husbandry.

These steps both reach, and teach thee shall,  
To come by thrift, to shift withall.

## ¶ GOOD HUSBANDLY LESSONS,

Worthy to be followed of such as will thrive <sup>1</sup>.

### CHAP. X.

1. God sendeth and giveth, both mouth and the meat,  
And blesseth us all with his benefits great :  
Then serve we the God, who so richly doth give,  
Shew love to our neighbours, and lay for to live.

<sup>1</sup> These lessons are the dictates of experience, on the suggestions of wisdom. They form the longest poem in the book ; and being applicable to all conditions of life, are the most valuable of any part of its contents. Good sense, however, rather than fine poetry, is conspicuous in every line. Even the quaint language which now and then occurs, gives only a stamp of authenticity to the sentiments, and renders

them more impressive. The marginal notes of the author, which have been carefully preserved from the edition of 1580, indicate the substance of the more important maxims. Where the *expression* requires explanation, notes are added by the present editor ; where the *words* only are obsolete, reference must be made to the Glossary, as is the plan adopted throughout.

## Good Husbandly Lessons.

2. As bud, by appearing, betok'neth the spring, (*a*)  
And leaf, by her falling, the contrary thing ;  
So youth bids us labour, to get as we can,  
For age is a burden to labouring man.
3. A competent living, and honestly had,  
Makes such as are godly, both thankfull and glad :  
Life, never contented, with honest estate,  
Lamented is oft, and repented too late.
4. Count never well gotten, what naughty is got,  
Nor well to account of, which honest is not :  
Look long not to prosper, that weighest not this,  
Lest prospering faileth, and all go amiss.
- Lay wisely to marry. 5. True wedlock is best, for avoiding of sin ;  
The bed undefiled, much honour doth win :  
Though love be in choosing, far better than gold,  
Let love come with somewhat, the better to hold.
- Concord bringeth foison. 6. Where couples agree not, is rancour and strife,  
Where such be together, is seldom good life ;  
Where couples in wedlock do lovely agree,  
There (*c*) foison remaineth, if wisdom there be.
- Wife and children crave a dwelling. 7. Who looketh to marry, must lay to keep house,  
For love may not alway, be playing with douse ;  
If children increase, and no stay of thine own,  
What afterward (*b*) follows is soon to be known.

---

VARIATIONS.

- (*a*) Verses 2, 3, and 4, are wanting in this edition. (*c*) Their.  
(*b*) afterwards.

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |                                                    |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| <p>8. Once charged with children, or likely to be,<br/>Give over to sojourn, that thinkest to thee ;<br/>Lest grudging of hostess, and craving of nurse,<br/>Be costly and noisome to thee and thy purse.</p>               | <p><i>Thee for<br/>thrive.</i></p>                 |
| <p>9. Good husbands that loveth good houses to keep <sup>1</sup>,<br/>Are oftentimes careful when others do sleep ;<br/>To spend as they may, or to stop at the first,<br/>For running in danger, or fear of the worst.</p> | <p>Live within<br/>thy tedder,<br/>(bounds.)</p>   |
| <p>10. Go count with thy coffers, when harvest is in,<br/>Which way for thy profit to save or to win :<br/>Of t'one or them both, if a savour we smell <sup>2</sup>,<br/>House-keeping is godly, wherever we dwell.</p>     | <p>By harvest, is<br/>meant all thy<br/>stock.</p> |
| <p>11. Son, think not thy money, purse bottom to burn,<br/>But keep it for profit, to serve thine own turn :<br/>A fool and his money be soon at debate,<br/>Which after, with sorrow, repents him too late.</p>            | <p>Be thine own<br/>purse-bearer.</p>              |
| <p>12. Good bargain adoining, make privy but few,<br/>In selling, refrain not, abroad it to shew :<br/>In making, make haste, and away to thy pouch,<br/>In selling, no haste, if ye dare it avouch.</p>                    |                                                    |

<sup>1</sup> Once for all let it be observed, that Tusser, in several places uses the nominative case plural, with a verb singular, as in this instance, " Good husbands that loveth, &c." The same anomaly is to be found in other authors of his day.

<sup>2</sup> " Of tone of them both." So all the editions which I have been able to meet with, run, without any variation ; probably because the ex-

pression was not understood. *Tone* for *t'one*, or *the one*, is a common prosodial figure with our author ; and, in my opinion, the reading intended was, *the one or them both*.—Meaning, " If we smell the savour of saving or winning, or them both." It seems to have been a typographical error, which escaped the writer himself.

## Good Husbandly Lessons.

- Evil Landlord. 13. Good landlord, who findeth, is blessed of God,—  
A cumbersome landlord is husbandman's rod;  
He noyeth, destroyeth, and all to this drift,  
To strip his poor tenant of farm and of thrift.
- Rent-corn. 14. Rent-corn, whoso payeth, (as worldlings would  
have (a) <sup>1</sup>,  
So much for an acre) must live like a slave;  
Rent-corn to be paid, for a (c) reas'nable rent,  
At reas'nable prices, is not to lament.
- Four beggars. 15. Once placed for profit, look never for ease,  
Except ye beware of such michers as these <sup>2</sup>,—  
Unthriftiness, slothfulness, careless and rash,  
That thrusteth thee headlong, to run in the lash.
- Thrift's  
Officers. 16. Make Money thy drudge, for to follow thy work,  
Make Wisdom comptroller, and Order thy clerk:  
Provision cater, and Skill to be (c) cook,  
Make Steward of all, pen, ink, and thy book.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) Verse 14 wanting. (c) a, wanting. (c) thy.

<sup>1</sup> It seems corn rents were formerly more common than now. Establish them generally, and the strongest objection to long leases will be done away.

<sup>2</sup> It would be endless to multiply instances of the shameful incorrectness, and perversion of the sense, in all the latter editions of our au-

thor. In this quatrain they have uniformly *misers* for *michers*, (thieves or pilferers). What kind of *misers*, "*unthriftiness*," &c. would make, never seems to have been considered. "Careless and rash," is a Gallicism, for *carelessness* and *rashness*.

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        |                                |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <p>17. Make hunger thy sauce, as a med'cine for health,<br/>         Make thirst to be butler, as physic for wealth :<br/>         Make eye to be usher, good usage to have,<br/>         Make bolt to be porter, to keep out a knave.</p>             | <p>Thrift's phys-<br/>sic.</p> |
| <p>18. Make husbandry bailiff, abroad to provide,<br/>         Make huswifery daily, at home for to guide :<br/>         Make coffer, fast locked, thy treasure to keep,<br/>         Make house to be suer, the safer to sleep.</p>                   | <p>Thrift's bailiff.</p>       |
| <p>19. Make bandog thy scoutwatch, to bark at a thief,<br/>         Make courage for life, to be captain chief :<br/>         Make trap-door thy bulwark, make bell to be gin (<i>b</i>)<br/>         Make gunstone and arrow, shew who is within.</p> | <p>Husbandly<br/>armour.</p>   |
| <p>20. The credit of master, to brothel his man,<br/>         And also of mistress, to minikin Nan,<br/>         Be causers of opening a number of gaps,<br/>         That letteth in mischief, and many mishaps.</p>                                  | <p>Thieves to<br/>thrift.</p>  |
| <p>21. Good husband he trudgeth to bring in the gains,<br/>         Good huswife she drudgeth, refusing no pains.<br/>         Though husband at home, be to count, ye wot what,<br/>         Yet huswife, within, is as needful as that.</p>          | <p>Friends to<br/>thrift.</p>  |
| <p>22. What helpeth in store, to have never so much,<br/>         Half lost by ill usage, ill huswives and such ?<br/>         So, twenty load bushes, cut down at a clap,<br/>         Such heed may be taken, shall stop but a gap.</p>              | <p>Enemy to<br/>thrift.</p>    |

---

## VARIATION.

(*b*) begin.



## Good Husbandly Lessons.

Six noisances  
to thrift.

23. A retcheless servant, a mistress that scowls,  
A ravening mastiff, and hogs that eat fowls,  
A giddy brain master, and stroyall his knave,  
Brings ruling to ruin, and thrift to her grave.

Enough is a  
praise.

24. With some upon Sundays, their tables do reek,  
And half the week after, their dinners do (*b*) seek,  
Not often exceeding, but always enough <sup>1</sup>,  
Is husbandly fare, and the guise of the plough.

25. Each day to be feasted, what husbandry worse,  
Each day for to feast, is as ill for the purse ;  
Yet measurely feasting, with neighbours among,  
Shall make thee beloved, and live the more long.

Thrift's ad-  
visers.

26. Things husbandly handsome, let workman contrive,  
But build not for glory, that thinkest to thrive ;  
Who fondly in doing, consumeth his stock,  
In the end for his folly, doth get but a mock.

Spoilers to  
thrift.

27. Spend none but your own, howsoever ye spend,  
For bribing and shifting have seldom good end :  
In substance although ye have never so much,  
Delight not in parasites, harlots, and such.

---

VARIATION.

(*b*) to.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Enough* or *inough*, pronounced *enow*. Some other similar terminations have the same sound.

28. Be siürty seldom, (but never for much)  
 For fear of purse, pennyless, hanging by such ;  
 Or *Scarborow* warning, as ill I believe <sup>1</sup>,  
 When (Sir, I arrest ye!) gets hold of thy sleeve.
29. Use (*legem pone*) to pay at thy day <sup>2</sup>,  
 But use not (*oremus*) for often delay :  
 Yet (*præsta quæsumus*) out of a grate,  
 Of all other collects, the lender doth hate.
30. Be pinched by lending, for kiffe nor for kin (*a*),  
 Nor also by spending, by such as come in ;  
 Nor put to thine hand, betwixt bark and the tree,  
 Lest through thine own folly, so pinched thou be.
31. As lending to neighbour, in time of his need,  
 Wins love of thy neighbour, and credit doth breed ;  
 So never to crave, but to live of thine own,  
 Brings comforts a thousand, to many unknown.

---

## VARIATION.

(*a*) Verses 30 and 31 wanting.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Scarborow warning," that is, a word and a blow, and the blow first. This Yorkshire proverb, according to Fuller, alludes to an event which happened at Scarborow in 1557, when Thomas Stafford seized on the castle, then in a defenceless state, before the townsmen had the least intimation of his approach. However, within six days, by the active exertions of the

Earl of Westmoreland, he was taken, carried to London, and beheaded for his treason.

<sup>2</sup> The meaning of this verse, though pedantically expressed, is, be "punctual in your pecuniary engagements, and avoid excuses for non-payment, as you would a prison, to which a failure in this respect naturally leads."

## Good Husbandly Lessons.

32. Who living but lends ? and be lent to they must,  
Else buying and selling must lie in the dust :  
But shameless and crafty that desperate are,  
Make many, full honest, the worser to fare.
33. At some time to borrow, account it no shame,  
If justly thou keepest thy touch for the same :  
Who quick be to borrow, and slow be to pay,  
Their credit is naught, go they never so gay.
34. By shifting and borrowing, who so as lives (a),  
Not well to be thought on, occasion gives :  
Then lay to live warily, and wisely to spend ;  
For prodigall livers have seldom good end.
35. Some spareth too late, and a number with him,—  
The fool at the bottom, the wise at the brim :  
Who careth, nor spareth, till spent he hath all,  
Of bobbing, not robbing, be fearful he shall.
36. Where wealthiness floweth, no friendship can lack,  
Whom poverty pincheth, hath freedom as slack ;  
Then happy is he, by example that can  
Take heed by the fall, of a mischieved man <sup>1</sup>.

---

### VARIATION.

(a) Verses 34, 35, and 36, wanting.

---

<sup>1</sup> “ Mischieved man,” a person who has suffered and been hurt by the persecutions of fortune, or the ingratitude of friends. The line re-

minds us of

*Felix quem facit aliena pericula  
cautum.*

37. Who breaketh his credit, or cracketh it twice,  
Trust such with a sûerty, if ye be wise <sup>1</sup> :  
Or if he be angry, for asking thy due,  
Once even, to him afterward, lend not anew.
38. Account it well sold, that is justly well paid,  
And count it well bought, that is never denaid ;  
But yet here is t'one, here is t'other doth best,  
For buyer and seller, for quiet and rest.
39. Leave princes' affaires, undescanted on <sup>2</sup>,  
And tend to such doings as stands thee upon :  
Fear God, and offend not the prince, nor his laws,  
And keep thyself out of the magistrate's claws.
40. As interest, or usury playeth the devil (*b c*) <sup>3</sup>,  
So hil-back and fil-belly biteth as evil :  
Put dicing among them, and docking the dell,  
And by and by after, of beggary smell.

VARIATIONS.

(*b*) drevil, (*c*) drevill : no doubt a typographical error for *devil* or *devill*.

<sup>1</sup> Neither trust the man without a surety, who has once injured his credit ; nor lend to him a second time, who is angry when you ask for your own.

<sup>2</sup> The quidnuncs of the present day will be little inclined to follow the first part of the author's advice ; and, perhaps, as little the second part, which recommends them to attend to their own proper business.

<sup>3</sup> Usury, dress, feasting, gambling, and wenching, are inveighed against, in terms sufficiently antiquated. *Hil-back* and *fil-belly* can refer only to extravagance in apparel and living. " Docking the dell," a very singular mode of expression, appears to mean, dangling at a wench's tail : for *dell* is at least old provincial English for a wench. See the Glossary.

## Good Husbandly Lessons.

Thrift's Auditor.

41. Once weekly, remember thy charges to cast,  
Once monthly, see how thy expences may last :  
If quarter declareth too much to be spent,  
For fear of ill year, take advice of thy rent.
  
42. Who orderly ent'reth his payments in book,  
May orderly find them again, (if he look :)  
And he that intendeth, but once for to pay,  
Shall find this in doing, the quietest way.
  
43. In dealing uprightly, this counsel I teach,  
First reckon, then write, ere to purse ye do reach ;  
Then pay and dispatch him, as soon as ye can,  
For ling'ring is hinderance, to many a man.
  
44. Have weights, I advise thee, for silver and gold,  
For some be in knavery, now a-days bold ;  
And for to be sûer, good money to pay,  
Receive that is current, as near as ye may.
  
45. Delight not, for pleasure, two houses to keep,  
Lest charge, without measure, upon thee do creep ;  
And *Jankin* and *Jenykin* cozen thee so <sup>1</sup>,  
To make thee repent it, ere year about go.
  
46. The stone that is rolling, can gather no moss,  
Who often removeth is sûer of loss :  
The rich it compelleth, to pay for his pride,  
The poor it undoeth, on every side.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jankin* and *Jenykin* are only appellatives for servants in general. The man who keeps two houses, as he cannot be in both at the same time, is undoubtedly exposed to the frauds of domestics, in a high degree.

47. The eye of the master enricheth the hutch,  
The eye of the mistress availeth as much ;  
Which eye , if it govern, with reason and skill,  
Hath servant and service, at pleasure and will.
  
48. Who seeketh revengement of every wrong,  
In quiet nor safety, continueth long :  
So he that of wilfulness, trieth the law,  
Shall strive for a coxcomb, and thrive as a daw.
  
49. To hunters and hawkers take heed what ye say,  
Mild answer with courtesy, drives them away ;  
So where a man's better will open a gap,  
Resist not with rudeness, for fear of mishap.
  
50. A man in this world, for a churl that is known <sup>1</sup>,  
Shall hardly in quiet, keep that is his own :  
Where lowly, and such as of courtesy smells,  
Finds favour and friendship, wherever he dwells.
  
51. Keep truly thy Sabbath, the better to speed ;  
Keep servant from gadding, but when it is need :  
Keep fish-day and fasting-day, as they do fall <sup>2</sup>,  
What custom thou keepest, let others keep all.

<sup>1</sup> The churlish, as being unamiable, are often provoked or injured on purpose, while the humble and courteous gain friends and favour. From the preceding quatrain it seems that hunters would take liberties in former days as well as in the present.

were no doubt recommended to be kept, in compliance with the established religion when the book was first written ; and though from the " Author's Belief," we see no reason to conclude that he continued a Roman Catholic, the spirit of patriotism prompted him on several occasions to recommend the eating

<sup>2</sup> " Fish-days and fasting-days,"



## Good Husbandly Lessons.

52. Though some in their tithing, be slack or too bold (a),  
 Be thou unto Godward, not that way too cold :  
 Evil conscience grudgeth, and yet we do see,  
 Ill titthers, ill thrivers most commonly be <sup>1</sup>.
53. Pay weekly thy workman, his houshold to feed,  
 Pay quarterly servants, to buy as they need :  
 Give garment to such as deserve, and no mo,  
 Lest thou and thy wife, without garment do go.
54. Beware *raskabilia*,—slothful to work <sup>2</sup>,  
 Purloiners and filchers, that loveth to lurk :  
 Away with such lubbers, so loth to take pain,  
 That rolls in expences, but never no gain.
55. Good wife and good children are worthy to eat,  
 Good servant, good labourer, earneth their meat ;  
 Good fellow, good neighbour, that fellowly guest,  
 With heartile welcome, should have of the best.

## VARIATION.

(a) Verse 52 wanting.

of fish on the stated days, as did the injunctions of Elizabeth, though declaring that the observance of them was not referred to a religious principle, the obligation was not only weakened but lost.

<sup>1</sup> Tusser's argument in favour of the clergy, that those who pay their tithes ill, commonly thrive ill, has still less effect on the prejudiced and the ignorant than it deserves. But

he who robs the parson of his lawful dues, might as well rob on the highway, and yet think himself an honest man !

<sup>2</sup> If I mistake not the author's meaning, for there is certainly room for conjecture, *Raskabilia* signifies in the abstract, all the rascally or worthless qualities afterwards enumerated.

56. Depart not with all that thou hast to thy child (a),  
Much less unto other, for being beguil'd:  
Lest if thou wouldst gladly possess it again,  
Look, for to come by it, thou wottest not when.
57. The greatest preferment that child we can give,  
Is learning and nurture, to train him to live;  
Which whoso it wanteth, though left as a squire,  
Consumeth to nothing, as block in the fire.
58. When God hath so blest thee, as able to live (a),  
And thou hast to rest thee, and able to give;  
Lament thy offences, serve God for amends,  
Make soul to be ready, when God for it sends.
59. Send fruits of thy faith to heaven, aforehand,  
For mercy here doing, God blesseth thy land;  
He maketh thy store with his blessing to swim,  
And after, thy soul to be blessed with him.
60. Some lay to get riches, by sea and by land,  
And vent'reth his life, in his enemies hand;  
And setteth his soul upon six or on seven<sup>1</sup>,  
Not caring nor fearing, for hell nor for heaven.

---

VARIATION.

(a) Verse 56 wanting.

(a) Verses 58 and 59 are not in this edition.

---

<sup>1</sup> "And setteth his soul upon six or on seven"—a proverbial mode of expression for carelessness and negligence. Things are still said to be "at sixes and sevens," when in confusion, or out of order.

## Good Husbandly Lessons.

61. Some pincheth and spareth, and pineth his life,  
 To coffer up bags, for to leave to his wife ;  
 And she (when he dieth) sets open the chest,  
 For such as can soothe her, and all away wrest.
62. Good husband preventing the frailness of some,  
 Takes part of God's benefits, as they do come :  
 And leaveth to wife and his children the rest,  
 Each one his own part, as he thinketh it best.
63. These lessons approved, if wisely ye note <sup>1</sup>,  
 May save and advantage ye, many a groat ;  
 Which if ye can follow, occasion found,  
 Then every lesson may save ye a pound.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tusser does not value his lessons, if well applied, at too high a price; but on their importance I have already remarked in note 1. p. xxi.

---

# AN HABITATION ENFORCED,

BETTER LATE THAN NEVER,

Upon these Words,

“ Sit down, *Robin*, and rest thee <sup>1</sup>. ”

---

## CHAP. XI.

My friend, if cause doth wrest thee,  
Ere folly hath much opprest thee,  
Far from acquaintance kest thee,  
Where country may digest thee,  
Let wood and water request thee,  
In good corn soil to nest thee,  
Where pasture and mead may brest thee,  
And healthsome air invest thee ;  
Though envy shall detest thee,  
Let that no whit molest thee,  
Thank God that hath so blest thee,  
And sit down, *Robin*, and rest thee.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is probable that this little piece was written to a popular tune or song, the dirge of which was made the subject of the poem. That it is difficult for a man to discharge the duties of any station, without some

fixed residence, is pretty obvious ; and happy is he, who when he takes to a habitation, can draw the comforts around him which are here indicated.

# THE FARMER'S DAILY DIET<sup>1</sup>.

## CHAP. XII.

A PLOT set down, for farmer's quiet,  
As time requires, to frame his diet :  
With sometime fish, and sometime fast,  
That houshold store may longer last.

Lent.

Let Lent, well kept, offend not thee,  
For March and April breeders be :  
Spend herring first, save salt-fish last,  
For salt-fish is good, when Lent is past.

Easter.

When Easter comes, who knows not than  
That veal and bacon is the man<sup>2</sup> ;  
And Martilmas beef doth bear good tack,  
When country folks do dainties lack.

<sup>1</sup> In this chapter, we have a correct picture of the farmer's mode of living, at the period when Tusser wrote. In this respect it is highly interesting ; and though we find few delicacies of an expensive kind, every thing is substantial and wholesome, though plain,—a just representation of the Elizabethan age. Salt meat, and fish both fresh and salted, it is evident, were standing articles of diet. Fish, as has been remarked, our author never fails to

recommend, by all the motives which were likely to influence his readers ; and which are equally cogent now as formerly—indeed more so, as an encreasing population can be supported only by giving more encouragement to the fisherman, and less to the grazier and the butcher.

<sup>2</sup> “ Veal and bacon is the man.” He means, is in season, or proper to be used. “ Martilmas beef,” is dried in the chimney like bacon.

When Mackrell ceaseth from the seas,  
John Baptist brings grass-beef and pease <sup>1</sup>.

Midsummer.

Fresh herring plenty, Michell (*b*) brings,  
With fatted crones, and such old things <sup>2</sup>.

Michaelmas.

All Saints do lay for pork and souse,  
For sprats and spurlings for their house.

Hallowmas,  
or tide.

At Christmas play, and make good cheer,  
For Christmas comes, but once a-year.

Christmas.

Though some then do, as do they would,  
Let thrifty do, as do they should.

A caveat.

For causes good, so many ways,  
Keep Embrings well, and fasting-days <sup>3</sup>.

Fasting.

## VARIATION.

(*b*) Mihell: both however mean *Michael*; as *Martilmas* is *Martinmas*, or *St. Martin's-day*.

<sup>1</sup> "John Baptist brings"—Meaning St. John's day. The other Saints that are named, it is almost needless to remark, refer to the season of the year, when their days are respectively kept. In times of popery, the Calendar was much more attended to than at present; and scarcely a saint in the list was wholly unnoticed and unknown, by the mass of the people.

<sup>2</sup> The farmers in old times were greater economists than now. "Old crones," or old ewes, "and such old things," it seems, fell commonly

to their own share, while the best meat was probably sold.

<sup>3</sup> "Embrings"—ember days or weeks, set apart for the consecrating to God the four seasons of the year, and for *imploing his blessing by fasting and prayer*. They were settled by the Council of Placentia, A. D. 1095, to be observed the Wednesday, Friday, and Saturday, after the first Sunday in Lent.—after Whitsunday,—after the 14th of September,—and the 13th of December.



## The Properties of Winds.

Fish days.

What law commands we ought t' (b) obey,  
For Friday, Saturn, and Wednesday.

A thing need-  
ful.

The land doth will, the sea doth wish,  
Spare sometime flesh, and feed of fish.

The last re-  
medy.

Where fish is scant, and fruit of trees,  
Supply that want, with butter and cheese.

*Quoth* TUSSER.

---

VARIATION.

(b) to.

---

## A DESCRIPTION OF THE PROPERTIES OF WINDS,

AT ALL TIMES OF THE YEAR<sup>1</sup>.

---

### CHAP. XIII.

In winter.

NORTH winds send hail, South winds bring rain,  
East winds we bewail, West winds blow amain :  
North-east is too cold, South-east not too warm,  
North-west is too bold, South-west doth no harm.

At the spring.

The North is a noyer to grass of all suites,  
The East a destroyer to herb and all fruits ;  
The South, with his showers, refresheth the corn,  
The West, to all flowers, may not be forborne.

Summer.

---

<sup>1</sup> These prognostications and observations are much more infallible than Moore's Almanac, the oracle of pious old women, or even the "Shepherd of Banbury's" rules for knowing the weather !

## The Properties of Winds.

xxxix

The West, as a father, all goodness doth bring,  
The East, a forbearer no manner of thing ;  
The South, as unkind, draweth sickness too near,  
The North, as a friend, maketh all again clear.

Autumn.

With temperate wind, we be blessed of God,  
With tempest we find, we are beat with his rod :  
All power, we know, to remain in his hand,  
How ever wind blow, by sea or by land.

God is the  
Governor of  
winds and  
weather.

Though winds do rage, as winds were wood <sup>1</sup>,  
And cause spring tides to raise great flood,  
And lofty ships leave anchor in mud  
Bereaving many of life, and of blood ;  
Yet true it is, as cow chews cud,  
And trees, at spring, do yield forth bud,  
Except wind stands, as never it stood,  
It is an ill wind turns none to good.

---

<sup>1</sup> " As winds were wood."— Wood or wode, is *mad, frantic, boisterous*, in the Scottish dialect ; and I believe the word is also used in the North of England, in the same sense.

The truism with which this stanza concludes, is intended to be witty—  
" It is an ill wind that blows nobody good."

---

## ¶ OF THE PLANETS <sup>2</sup>.

---

### CHAP. XIV.

As huswives are taught, instead of a clock,  
How winter nights passeth, by crowing of cock ;  
So here by the Planets, as far as I dare,  
Some lessons I leave, for the husbandman's share.

---

<sup>2</sup> The chapter of the planets is as is generally interesting to farmers brief, but perhaps contains as much on this subject.

## Of the Planets.

Of the rising  
and going  
down of the  
sun.

If day star appeareth, day comfort is nigh,  
If sun be at south, it is noon by and bye :  
If sun be at westward, it setteth anon,  
If sun be at setting, the day is soon gone.

Of the moon  
changing.

Moon changed, keeps closet, three day as a queen,  
Ere she in her prime will of any be seen ;  
If great she appeareth, it showereth out <sup>1</sup>,  
If small she appeareth, it signifies drought.

At change or at full, come it late, or else soon <sup>2</sup>,  
Main sea is at highest, at midnight and noon ;  
But yet in the creeks, it is later high flood,  
Through farness of running, by reason as good.

Of flowing  
and ebbing  
to such as  
are sick.

Tide flowing is feared, for many a thing,  
Great danger to such as be sick, it doth bring ;  
Sea ebb, by long ebbing, some respite doth give,  
And sendeth good comfort, to such as shall live.

<sup>1</sup> " If great she appeareth"—that is, if seen through a dense atmosphere, it is an indication of approaching rain. The reverse is the case when the atmosphere is rare, and the orb of the moon looks small.

<sup>2</sup> The influence of the moon on the tides is well known ; but an ex-

planation of the principle by which the effect is produced, belongs to astronomy and not to agriculture. Whether the tides have any influence on the sick, except as connected with the moon, may be questioned. It was no doubt, however, the popular belief when Tusser wrote, and therefore is properly noticed.

# SEPTEMBER'S ABSTRACT

## CHAP. XV\*.

1. Now enter, John,  
Old farmer is gone.
2. What champion useth,  
That woodland refuseth.
3. Good farm now take,  
Keep still, or forsake.
4. What helps revive,  
The thriving to thrive.

## VARIATION.

\* In all the copies which I have been able to meet with, this chapter is marked XIV. though the last was the same. The mistake probably arose from adding the new chapter of PLANETS, and not altering the subsequent figures or numerals. The negligence of modern printers is often felt; but their predecessors in the art, at least in this country, were not less inaccurate.

---

<sup>1</sup> To the more cursory reader it may be useful to observe, that the *Abstract* of each month consists of short memorial verses, which are expanded in the detailed *Husbandry*, with considerable art and skill. Notes and explanations therefore will be chiefly reserved for the latter, in order to avoid repetitions.

## September's Abstract.

5. Plough, fence and store,  
Aught (c) else before.
6. By tits and such,  
Few gaineth much :
7. Horse strong and light,  
Soon charges quite.  
Light head and purse  
What lightness worse.
8. Who goeth a borrowing  
Goeth a sorrowing.  
Few lends, but fools,  
Their working tools.
9. Green rye have some,  
Ere Michelmas come.
10. Grant soil her lust, ,  
Sow rye in the dust.
11. Clean rye that sows  
The better crop mows.
12. Mix rye aright,  
With wheat that is white.
13. See corn sown in,  
Too thick, nor too thin.  
For want of seed,  
Land yieldeth weed.
14. With sling or bow,  
Keep corn from crow.
15. Trench, hedge and furrow,  
That water may thorough.

---

### VARIATION.

(c) ought.

- Deep dike saves much,  
From drovers, and such.
16. Amend marsh wall,  
Crab holes and all.
17. Geld bulls and rams,  
Sew ponds, amend dams.  
Sell webster thy wool,  
Fruit gather, grapes pull.  
For fear of drabs,  
Go gather thy crabs.
18. Pluck fruit to last,  
When Michell(*b*) is past.
19. Forget it not,  
Fruit bruised, will rot.  
Light ladder and long,  
Doth tree least wrong.  
Go gather with skill,  
And gather that will.
20. Drive hive, good Coney,  
For wax, and for honey.  
No driving of hive,  
Till years past five.
21. Good dwelling give bee,  
Or else goes she.
22. Put boar in sty, e,  
Till Hallontide nigh.
23. With boar, good Ciss,  
Let naught be amiss.

---

## VARIATION.

(*b*) Mihell.



## September's Abstract.

24. Karle hemp, left green,  
Now pluck up clean.  
Drown hemp, as ye need,  
Once had out its seed.  
I pray thee (good *Kit*)  
Drown hemp in pit.
25. Of all the rest,  
White hemp is best.  
Let skilfull be gotten,  
Lest hemp prove rotten.
26. Set strawberries, wife,  
I love them for life.
27. Plant respe and rose,  
And such as those.
28. Go, gather up mast,  
Ere time be past.  
Mast fats up swine,  
Mast kills up kine.
29. Let hogs be rung,  
Both old and young.
30. No mast upon oak,  
No longer unyoke.  
If hog do cry,  
Give ear and eye.
31. Hogs haunting corn,  
May not be borne.
32. Good neighbour, thou,  
Good custom allow.  
No scaring with dog,  
Whilst mast is for hog.
33. Get home with the brake,  
To brew with and bake ;  
To cover the shed,  
Dry over the bed ;

## September's Abstract.

5

- To lie under cow ;  
To rot under mow ;  
To serve to burn,  
For many a turn.
34. To saw-pit draw  
Board log, to saw.  
Let timber be haile  
Lest profit do quaille.  
Such board and pale,  
Is ready sale.
35. Sawn slab let lie,  
For stable and sty.  
Saw-dust, spread thick  
Makes alley trick.
36. Keep safe thy fence,  
Scare break-hedge thence :  
A drab and a knave,  
Will prowl to have.
37. Mark wind, and moon,  
At midnight and noon :  
Some rigs thy plow,  
Some milks thy cow.
38. Red cur, or black,  
Few prowlers lack.
39. Some steal, some pilch,  
Some all away filch.  
Mark losses with grief,  
Through prowling thief.

Thus endeth September's Abstract, agreeing with September's Husbandry.

## September's Abstract.

### I OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Now, friend, as ye wish,  
Go sever thy fish ;  
When friend shall come,  
To be sure of some.

Thy ponds renew,  
Put eels in stew,  
To leave till Lent,  
And then to be spent.

Set privy, or prim,  
Set bore like him :  
Set gilliflowers all,  
That grows on the wall.

Set herbs some more,  
For winter store.  
Sow seeds for pot,  
For flowers sow not.

*Here ends September's short Remembrances.*

---

## SEPTEMBER'S HUSBANDRY.

---

### CHAP. XVI.

September blow soft,  
Till fruit be in loft,

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. AT Michelmas lightly, new farmer comes in <sup>1</sup>,  
New husbandry forceth him, new (*a*) to begin;  
Old farmer, still taking, the time to him given,  
Makes August to last, untill Michelmas even.
  2. New farmer may enter, (as champions say) <sup>2</sup>,  
On all that is fallow, at Lent Lady-day :  
In woodland, old farmer to that will not yield,  
For losing of pasture, and feed of his field.
- 

### VARIATIONS.

(*a*) &c. All the standard editions read *new* : Hilman has *now*.

---

<sup>1</sup> September is properly the month when the crops are all cleared from the land, and the annual labours of agriculture begin their round. On this account, it is justly put first in the calendar of farming. Some, indeed, take their bargains from Lady-day; but this is by no means so convenient as Michaelmas.

<sup>2</sup> The off-going tenant of champion or open field, as is still cus-

tomary, allows the coming-in tenant to summer fallow that portion of the ground which is destined for wheat. But the occupier of woodland or inclosures holds the whole till the expiration of his term, unless particular stipulations are made by lease; and without a lease, neither the real interest of the tenant nor the land-owner can be consulted.

## September's Husbandry.

Farm take, or  
give over.

3. Provide against Michelmas, bargain to make,  
For farm to give over, to keep or to take ;  
In doing of either, let wit bear a stroke <sup>1</sup>,  
For buying or selling of pig in a poke.

Twelve good  
properties.

4. Good farm and well stored, good housing and dry <sup>2</sup>,  
Good corn and good dairy, good market and nigh ;  
Good shepherd, good tillman, good *Jack* and good *Gill*,  
Make husband and huswife their coffers to fill.

Have ever a  
good fence.

5. Let pasture be stored, and fenced about <sup>3</sup>,  
And tillage set forward, as needeth without ;  
Before ye do open your purse, to begin  
With any thing doing, for fancy within.

Best cattle  
most profit.

6. No storing of pasture with baggagely tit <sup>4</sup>,  
With ragged, with aged, and evil at hit (*abc*)  
Let carren and barren be shifted away,  
For best is the best, whatsoever ye pay.

---

VARIATIONS.

(*a*) athyt (*b c*) athit, not separated, though with the more  
modern copies I prefer *at hit*, meaning *bad breeders*.

---

<sup>1</sup> Caution is justly recommended  
in making a bargain ; and this often  
prevents future losses and misun-  
derstandings.

<sup>2</sup> The twelve properties of a  
good farm want no explanation ;  
yet great judgment is necessary in  
chusing, and much good fortune is  
required in finding a situation that  
will combine them all.

<sup>3</sup> If you mean to thrive, pay  
more attention to out-doors than

in-doors conveniences and improve-  
ments ; that is, consult your interest  
before you begin to please your  
fancy. This is very salutary advice,  
and cannot be too often repeated.

<sup>4</sup> In stocking pastures, it is ob-  
viously more profitable to buy in  
young and well-conditioned animals  
than such as are old and ill-shaped :  
the one will be improving, the other  
degenerating.

7. Horse, oxen, plough, tumbrell, cart, waggon and wain<sup>1</sup>, Strong and light.

The lighter and stronger, the greater thy gain :  
The soil and the seed, with the sheaf and the purse,  
The lighter in substance, for profit the worse.

8. To borrow to-day, and to-morrow to miss<sup>2</sup>, Hate borrowing.  
For lender and borrower, noyance it is ;  
Then have of your own, without lending unspilt,  
What followeth needful, here learn if thou wilt.

## *A Digression to Husbandly Furniture.*

1. Barn-locked, gofe-ladder, short pitchfork, and long<sup>3</sup>, Barn furniture.  
Flail, straw fork, and rake, with a fan that is strong ;  
Wing, cartnave and bushel, peck, strike ready hand,  
Get casting shouel (*b*), broom, and a sack with a band.

---

### VARIATION.

(*b*) sholve, now spelt *shovel*, but commonly pronounced as in the text.

<sup>1</sup> "Light and strong," ought to be the rule no less in beasts of draught than in farming utensils ; but in contradistinction to this, your *soil, seed, sheaf, and purse*, cannot be too heavy.

<sup>2</sup> Find such necessities as the author proceeds to enumerate, and not waste time in borrowing, what you ought to have of your own.

<sup>3</sup> A good farmer pays the first attention to his barn, in order that

every thing may be secure. He who is negligent in this respect, invites a thief, by throwing temptation in his way.

Some of the husbandry implements need no explanation, as being now in use. In regard to others, I have received occasional assistance from *Hilman*, who lived within a century of our author's time. The reader will thank me for not incessantly referring him to the glossary



Stable furniture.

2. A stable well planked, with key and with lock <sup>1</sup>,  
Walls strongly well lined, to bear off a knock ;  
A rack and a manger, good litter and hay,  
Sweet chaff, and some provender, every day.
3. A pitch-fork, a dung-fork, sieve, skep, and a bin <sup>2</sup>,  
A broom, and a pail, to put water therein ;  
A hand-barrow, wheel-barrow, shovel, and spade,  
A curry-comb, mane-comb, and whip for a jade.
4. A buttrice, and pincers, a hammer and nail <sup>3</sup>,  
And apron, and scissars for head and for tail,  
Whole bridle and saddle, whitleather, and nall,  
With collars and harness, for thiller and all.

in this part of the work. A *gofe* is a *mow* ; and the *gofe-ladder* is for the thresher to ascend and descend, in order to throw down the sheaves with the assistance of the *short pitch-fork*, while the *long* was probably for pitching the straw. The *straw fork* and *rake* were to turn the straw from off the threshed corn ; and the *fan* and *wing* to clean it. A *cart-nave*, might be required to stand on in this operation. A *casting shovel*, such as maltmen use, enables the farmer to select the best and heaviest grain for seed, as they always fly farthest, if thrown with equal force.

<sup>1</sup> Whether a stable should be *planked* or *pitched*, must be left to veterinarians : perhaps planking means with flat stones, not wood. *Chaff* undoubtedly ought to be *sweet* ;

and its utility in making oats go farther, by obliging the animal to grind them, is well known.

<sup>2</sup> A *skep* is a small basket, or wooden vessel with a handle, to fetch corn in, and for other purposes.

<sup>3</sup> A *buttrice* is to pare horses' hoofs with ; and the instruments of shoeing in general ought to be in the possession of every farmer, not only to save expence but also time. A *nall* is an awl, such as collar-makers use. *Whit-leather* is to mend harness, &c. as occasion may require. Formerly particular tradesmen were not so numerous ; and even now, the farmer who cannot, either by himself or his servant, do little jobs, will often be at a loss on emergencies.

5. A pannell and wanty, pack-saddle, and ped<sup>1</sup>,  
A line to fetch litter, and halters for head ;  
With crotchets (*b*) and pins, to hang trinkets thercon,  
And stable fast chained, that nothing be gone.
6. Strong axle-treed cart, that is clouted and shod<sup>2</sup>, Cart furni-  
ture.  
Cart-ladder and wimble, with perser and pod ;  
Wheel ladder for harvest, light pitch-forks, and tough,  
Shave, whip-lash well knotted, and cart-rope enough.
7. Ten sacks, whereof every one holdeth a coom<sup>3</sup>, A coom is  
half a quarter.  
A pulling-hook handsome, for bushes and broom ;  
Light tumbrel and dung-crone, for easing Sir wag,  
Shouel, pickax, and mattock, with bottle and bag.

---

## VARIATION.

(*b*) crotchis.

<sup>1</sup> Between a *pannel* and *ped*, or *pad*, the difference is, the one is shorter than the other, and raised before and behind for small burdens, while the other is adapted for large: the *wanty* is a leather tie for them, indifferently. *Pack-saddles*, as well as the former articles, are much less common than in former days. Carts and waggons, in most situations, better supply their use. A *chain* to a stable-door is applicable to various purposes, besides being a protection from thieves, it allows the admission of light and air, when the horses are loose, or harnessing.

<sup>2</sup> "Clouted and shod," is arming the axle-tree with iron plates, and

the fellows with a tire on the circumference of the wheel. *Cart* and *wheel ladders* are probably frames on the sides and tail, to support hay or corn, when the load is to be increased. A *pod* appears to be a box or old leather bottle nailed to the side of the cart, to hold necessary implements, or perhaps grease. A *shave* is an instrument with two handles, for working down wood to its proper size and form, such as spokes, staves, &c.

<sup>3</sup> "Ten sacks," each holding a coom or four bushels are only sufficient for a single load of wheat; but neither farms were so large nor their produce so great, when Tusser wrote.

## Husbandry Furniture.

Husbandry  
tools.

8. A grindstone, a whetstone, a hatchet and bill,  
With hammer, and English nail, sorted with skill;  
A frower of iron, for cleaving of lath <sup>1</sup>,  
With roll for a saw-pit, good husbandry hath.

9. A short saw, and long saw, to cut a-two logs,  
An axe, and an adze, to make trough for thy hogs;  
A Dover Court beetle, and wedges with steel <sup>2</sup>,  
Strong lever to raise up the block from the wheel.

Plough fur-  
niture.

10. Two ploughs and a plough-chain, two culters, three  
shares <sup>3</sup>,  
With ground clouts and side clouts for soil that sow  
tars  
With ox-bows and ox-yokes, and other things mo,  
For ox-team and horse-team in plough for to go.

The *pulling hook* is a barbed iron, for drawing *firing* from the wood stack. The *tumbrel* is a dung-cart, and the *dung-crone* is a bent dung-hook for unloading or *easing Sir wag*, probably so called for rhyme's sake.

<sup>1</sup> Among other implements which need no explanation, we find a *frower of iron*, or the tool used for cleaving of *lath*, which appears to have been any sized wood, applicable to rough work, and which could be managed by this instrument.

<sup>2</sup> "A Dover Court beetle," is one that is large (like the rood of Dover once so celebrated) and capable of making a great noise. There is an old proverb "A Dover Court: all speakers and no hearers."

<sup>3</sup> Two or indeed more *ploughs* are necessary on every farm, as the chain plough for stoney ground, and the swing for clay. An *extra plough-share* may likewise be wanted. *Ground clouts* and *side clouts* are frequently made of old streaks of wheels, and save expences. An *ox-team* in more economical times was the constant appendage of a farm; but the *bows* and *yokes* have been judiciously laid aside. Even the ox himself is too much disused in modern agriculture. A premium ought to be proposed for the encouragement of ox-teams\*; and an additional tax on horses where more than one team of them is kept, would be beneficial to the public.

\* See Berkshire Agricultural Report, on the comparison between horses and oxen.

11. A plough-beetle, plough-staff, to further the plough<sup>1</sup>,  
Great clod to asunder that breaketh so rough ;  
A sled for a plough, and another for blocks,  
For chimney in winter, to burn up their docks.
12. Sedge-collars for plough-house, for lightness of neck<sup>2</sup>,  
Good seed and good sower, and also seed peck ;  
Strong oxen and horses, well shod, and well clad,  
Well meated and used, for making thee sad.
13. A barley-rake, toothed with iron and steel<sup>3</sup>,  
Like pair (b) of harrows, and roller doth well ;  
A sling for a mother (b), a bow for a boy,  
A whip for a carter, is hoigh de la roy.

## VARIATIONS.

(b) paier.

(b) moether.

<sup>1</sup> In some parts of this island it is still the practice to have a beetle to break the large clods after the plough, and it deserves to be more general. The *plough-staff* is to clear away the mould or weeds which clog the plough in working. A *sled* is useful for many purposes.

<sup>2</sup> Our economical forefathers who probably never heard of a *first* team, or a team kept merely for parade to carry corn to the nearest market, were satisfied with ordinary harness, and *sedge-collars*, as being lightest and coolest would probably be preferred by the animal, if it could

speak. *Well clad* does not mean in clothes, but in good condition.

<sup>3</sup> On the *iron-toothed barley-rake* we have made an improvement. The large rake, called the *devil* in some places, because it leaves nothing behind for the gleaners, is a capital implement. A *mother* or *mather* is a young girl, for whom a *sling* is thought most suitable, to drive away birds, as a *bow* is for a boy. Bows used to be sold for this purpose at Bartholomew-fair. *Hoi de la roi* is a cant term for "just as it should be."

## Husbandly Furniture.

- Harvest tools. 14. A brush scythe, and grass-scythe, with rifle to stand <sup>1</sup>,  
 A cradle for barley, with rubstone and sand ;  
 Sharp sickle and weeding-hook, hay-fork and rake,  
 A meak for the pease, and to swinge up the brake.
15. Short rakes for to gather up barley to bind <sup>2</sup>,  
 And greater to rake up such leavings behind ;  
 A rake for to hale (c) up, the fitches that lie,  
 A pike for to pike them up, handsome to dry.
16. A skuttle or skreen, to rid soil from the corn <sup>3</sup>,  
 And shearing-sheers ready, for sheep to be shorn ;  
 A fork and a hook, to be tamp'ring in clay,  
 A lath-hammer, trowell, a hod or a tray.

---

### VARIATION.

(c) rake.

---

<sup>1</sup> A *brush-scythe* seems to have been an old scythe with a particular kind of sned to cut up weeds: a *rifle*, or *ryfle*, is a bent stick standing on the but of a scythe sned or handle, by which the corn is struck into rows. A *cradle* is a three-forked instrument of wood, on which the corn is caught as it falls from the scythe, and thus is laid in regular order. It is heavy to work with; but is extremely useful for cutting barley or oats, which are intended to be put into sheaves. The common mode of mowing barley is both slovenly and wasteful in the extreme.

A *meath* is a hook at the end of a handle about five feet long to hackle up pease.

<sup>2</sup> The application of *rakes* is well known. "The rake to rake up the fitches that lie," or to tear away the corn uncut, is the large iron-toothed rake. A *pike* is no other than a pitchfork, with two or three prongs, for cocking corn not put into sheaves.

<sup>3</sup> A *skuttle* is only a larger kind of *skep*. The *fork* and *hook* for *tempering clay* or loam with straw for walls, are the dung-fork and crone already described. A *lath-hammer* is a common implement. Hilman

17. Strong yoke for a hog, with a twitcher and rings <sup>1</sup>,  
With tar in a tar-pot, for dangerous things;  
A sheep-mark, a tar-kettle, little or mitch,  
Two pottles of tar to a pottle of pitch.
18. Long ladder to hang, all along by the wall,  
To reach for a need, to the top of thy hall;  
Beam, scales, with the weights, that be sealed and  
true <sup>2</sup>,  
Sharp mole-spear with barbs, that the moles do so  
rue.
19. Sharp-cutting spade, for the dividing of mow,  
With skuppat and skavell, that marsh-men allow <sup>3</sup>:  
A sickle to cut with, a didall and crome,  
For draining of ditches, that noyes thee at home.

considers it as two distinct words—the *lath* or *lathe*, and the *hammer*; but this does not appear warranted by the best editions.

<sup>1</sup> *Twitchers* are for clinching the *hog-rings*. Tar is the common “salve for all sores” in cattle. “Two pounds of tar to a pound of pitch,” is a good composition for sheep-marks.

<sup>2</sup> Every honest man will keep just or sealed and true weights and measures. A *mole spear with barbs*, is less used now than traps and gins. A farmer however should always carry one, or a paddle in his hand,

to be ready, as opportunity may offer, to destroy moles or weeds.

<sup>3</sup> A *skuppat* or scoop is used in marsh lands to throw out thin mud from the ditches. A *skavel* somewhat resembles a peat-spade. A *sickle* is a hook at the end of a long pole, to cut weeds at the bottom of a ditch or drain. A *diddall* is a triangular spade, well adapted for cutting and banking up ditches, where the soil is loose. The *crome* resembles a dung-rake, and is for drawing out the weeds that are cut from the bottom of the ditch.



## September's Husbandry.

20. A clavestock, and rabbetstock, carpenters crave <sup>1</sup>,  
 And seasoned timber, for pinwood to have ;  
 A jack for to saw upon, fuel for fire,  
 For sparing of fire-wood and sticks from the mire.

21. Soles, fetters, and shackles, with horse-lock and  
 pad <sup>2</sup>,  
 A cow-house for winter, so meet to be had,  
 A sty for a boar, and a hogscote for hog,  
 A roost for thy hens, and a couch for thy dog.

### *Here endeth Husbandly Furniture.*

- Sowing of rye. 9. Thresh seed, and to fanning, September doth cry,  
 Get plough to the field, and be sowing of rye <sup>3</sup> :  
 To harrow the ridges, ere ever ye strike,  
 Is one piece of husbandry Suffolk doth like.

<sup>1</sup> A provident farmer will keep all the carpenter's implements here enumerated. Wood sawed or cleft will frequently go farther than when used whole.

<sup>2</sup> *Soles* may mean coarse leather soling for shoes, which formerly husbandmen and their servants applied, as wanted. In remote parts of the kingdom, the practice is not yet quite obsolete.

<sup>3</sup> Rye, which was once cultivated to a much greater extent than at

the present period, is to be sown early, for the reasons given in next quatrain, that it may be strong before the frost sets in. *White wheat* is likewise recommended to be sown timely ; and where the soil is light, it is used as a preventive of blight and mildew. *Striking* is the last ploughing before the seed is committed to the ground ; before which the ridges are to be harrowed. At least this suits Suffolk, according to our author.

10. Sow timely thy white-wheat, sow rye in the dust,  
Let seed have his (c) longing, let soil have her lust <sup>1</sup> :  
Let rye be partaker of Michelmas spring,  
To bear out the hardness that winter doth bring.
11. Some mixeth to miller the rye with the wheat Meslin.  
Tems loaf, on his table, to have for to eat <sup>2</sup> :  
But sow it not mixed, to grow so on land,  
Lest rye tarry wheat, till it shed as it stand.
12. If soil do desire to have rye with the wheat,  
By growing together, for safety more great ;  
Let white-wheat be t'one, be it dear, be it cheap <sup>3</sup>,  
The sooner to ripe, for the sickle to reap.
13. Though beans be in sowing, but scattered in <sup>4</sup>, Sowing.  
Yet wheat, rye, and peason, I love not too thin :  
Sow barley and dredge with a plentiful hand,  
Lest weed, stead of seed, overgroweth thy land.

---

## VARIATION.

(c) her.

---

<sup>1</sup> " Let soil have her lust"—that is, adapt yourself to the nature of the soil, and the kind of grain to be sown.

<sup>2</sup> *Tems loaf* is a mixture of wheat and rye, out of which the coarser bran only is taken. It is moist and palatable, but laxative to most constitutions.

<sup>3</sup> *White wheat*, as ripening most

early, is most proper to be sown with rye, lest the one should shed before the other is ready for the sickle.

<sup>4</sup> *Beans* are rarely sown broad cast at this time, and why they should be sown thin, is not explained. *Dredge* is a mixture of oats and barley, now exploded as a crop.

Keeping of  
crows.

14. No sooner a sowing, but out by and by,  
With mother or boy, that alarum can cry ;  
And let them be armed with sling or with bow,  
To scare away pigeon, the rook, and the crow <sup>1</sup>.

Water fur-  
rough.

15. Seed sown, draw a furrow, the water to drain <sup>2</sup>,  
And dyke up such ends, as in harm do remain ;  
For driving of cattle, or roving that way,  
Which being prevented, ye hinder their prey.

Amend marsh  
walls.

16. Saint Michel doth bid thee, amend the marsh wall <sup>3</sup>,  
The breck and the crab-hole, the foreland and all :  
One noble, in season, bestowed thereon,  
May save thee a hundred, ere winter be gone.

Gelding of  
rams.

17. Now geld with the gelder, the ram and the bull,  
Sew ponds, amend dams, and sell webster thy wool :

<sup>1</sup> The *rook* and the *crow* are no doubt injurious at seed-time and harvest ; but as they are rather insectivorous than granivorous birds, they amply compensate at other seasons for any temporary depredations, if properly watched. Their numbers unquestionably should be kept within bounds, but to exterminate them would be to leave the earth a prey to grubs and worms. *Pigeons*, however, are at all times destructive. It is calculated that a pair of them would eat a quarter of corn in a year. The returns from them, in every possible way, can be no equivalent for this.

<sup>2</sup> In open fields, or what our an-

thor calls the champion, *furrow-draining* is almost the only kind of improvement that can be used ; and as it is equally cheap and expeditious, it should never be neglected, when more permanent modes of drainage would be too expensive. *Dyking up ends* is likewise the only fence that lands thus circumstanced will commonly allow. The occupiers of common fields have numerous disadvantages to contend with.

<sup>3</sup> The walls of marsh lands obviously require constant attention. A noble, or 6s. 8d. timely expended, will save a hundred in repairs of many kinds.

Out, fruit go and gather, but not in the dew <sup>1</sup>,  
With crab and the walnut, for fear of a shrew.

18. The moon in the wane, gather fruit for to last <sup>2</sup>,  
But winter fruit gather, when Michel is past ;  
Though michers that love not to buy or to crave,  
Make some gather sooner, else few for to have.  
Gathering of fruit.
19. Fruit gathered too timely will taste of the wood <sup>3</sup>,  
Will shrink and be bitter, and seldom prove good :  
So fruit that is shaken, and beat off a tree,  
With bruising in falling, soon faulty will be.  
Too early gathering is not best.
20. Now burn up the bees, that ye mind for to drive <sup>4</sup>,  
At Midsummer drive them, and save them alive ;  
Place hive in good aier, set southly and warm,  
And take in due season, wax, honey and swarm.  
Driving of bees.

---

<sup>1</sup> Fruit should be gathered dry. Even walnuts will turn black, if gathered wet.

<sup>2</sup> It is an ancient prejudice, but founded on no sound philosophical principles, that certain operations are to be performed when the moon is either *waxing* or *waning*. In any case, however, fruit will keep the better for being allowed to hang its proper time, if it can escape the *michers* or thieves.

<sup>3</sup> These observations are in general confirmed by experience ; but shrivelled fruit is more esteemed

than that which is over-ripe, and consequently has lost its flavour.

<sup>4</sup> There have been many ingenious methods proposed for saving the bees and yet obtaining honey ; but they are in a great measure futile. The fact is, bees are but short lived at best, and it is impossible for them to subsist without their proper food. It appears to me, therefore, that there is less cruelty in instantly suffocating them with brimstone, than in taking their honey, and thus starving them by a lingering death. We sometimes refine too much !

Preserving of 21. Set hive on a plank, not too low by the ground <sup>1</sup>,  
bees. Where herb with the flowers may compass it round ;  
And boards to defend it from north and north-east,  
From showers and rubbish, from vermin and beast.

Stye up the 22. At Michelmas, safely, go stye up the boar,  
boar. Lest straying abroad, ye do see him no more :  
The sooner the better for hallontide nigh,  
And better he brawneth, if hard he do lie <sup>2</sup>.

23. Shift boar (for ill air) as best ye do think,  
And twice a-day, give him fresh vittle and drink ;  
And diligent Cisley, my dairy good wench,  
Make cleanly his cabin, for measling and stench <sup>3</sup>.

Gathering of 24 Now pluck up thy hemp, and go beat out the seed <sup>4</sup>,  
winter hemp. And afterward water it, as ye see need ;  
But not in the river, where cattle should drink,  
For poisoning (c) them, and the people with stink.

---

VARIATION.

(c) of them.

---

<sup>1</sup> Hives undoubtedly should be protected and provided for, as here indicated. The value of this kind of stock, to a poor man, is not inconsiderable.

<sup>2</sup> A brawler should be kept cool and hard, which increaseth his shield, as the skin of the shoulder is called.

<sup>3</sup> The measles in hogs are small round globules or pustules that lie among the muscles ; and are sup-

posed to be occasioned by uncleanness, and want of water.

<sup>4</sup> It is evident that hemp was formerly cultivated here to a great extent. The neglect of this valuable plant is one of the misfortunes arising from a dependence on foreign trade, which war or other casualties may interrupt. Our soil in many places is excellently adapted for the culture of hemp ; and in fact, we possess the

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |                                                           |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>25. Hemp huswifely used, looks clearly and bright,<br/>And selleth itself, by the colour so white :<br/>Some useth to water it, (c) some do it not <sup>1</sup>,<br/>Be skilfull in doing, for fear it do rot.</p>               | <p>Whitest hemp<br/>best sold.</p>                        |
| <p>26. Wife, into thy garden, and set me a plot <sup>2</sup>,<br/>With strawberry roots, of the best to be got :<br/>Such growing abroad, among thorns in the wood,<br/>Well chosen and picked, prove excellent good.</p>           | <p>Setting of<br/>strawberries<br/>and roses, &amp;c.</p> |
| <p>27. The barberry, respis and gooseberry too,<br/>Look now to be planted, as other things do :<br/>The gooseberry, respis, and roses all three,<br/>With strawberries under them, trimly agree.</p>                               | <p>Gooseberries<br/>and respis.</p>                       |
| <p>28. To gather some mast, it shall stand thee upon,<br/>With servant and children, ere mast be all gone :<br/>Some left among bushes shall pleasure thy swine <sup>3</sup>;<br/>For fear of a mischief, keep acorns fro kine.</p> | <p>Gathering of<br/>mast.</p>                             |

---

## VARIATION.

(c) *but* some.

means within ourselves, of raising or manufacturing almost every thing necessary for our domestic wants, or public defence.

The *retting* of hemp, as it is called, should be done with care. It should be taken out of the water as soon as it begins to swim. The smell left by hemp and flax is extremely noisome.

<sup>1</sup> There are two ways of retting

hemp ; by water, and by the natural dews.

<sup>2</sup> A good garden is an essential appendage to a farm or to a cottage ; and it seems the care of it was formerly delegated to the *wife* ; probably because it partook of the nature of a domestic employment.

<sup>3</sup> From various parts of this work, it appears, that hogs were once a principal part of the stock of every



Rooting of  
hogs.

29. From rooting of pasture, ring hog ye had need<sup>1</sup>,  
Which being well ringled, the better do feed.  
Though young with their elders will lightly keep best,  
Yet spare not to ringle both great and the rest.

Yoking of  
swine.

30. Yoke seldom thy swine, while the (c) shack time doth  
last<sup>2</sup>,  
For divers misfortunes that happen too fast ;  
Or if ye do fancy whole ear of the hog,  
Give eye (c) to ill-neighbour, and ear to his dog.

Hunting of  
hogs.

31. Keep hog, I advise thee, from meadow and corn,  
For out aloud crying, that ere he was born :  
Such lawless, so haunting, both often and long,  
If dog set him chaunting, he doth thee no wrong.

Ringling of  
hogs.

32. Where love among neighbours doth (b) bear any stroke,  
While shack time endureth, men use not to yoke :  
Yet surely ringling is needful and good,  
Till frost do invite them to brakes in the wood.

---

VARIATIONS.

(c) *wants* the.

(c) ear.

(b) do.

---

farm. Swine by rooting under trees and bushes, occasionally plant acorns which escape their search. For animals which chew the cud, mast cannot be proper.

<sup>1</sup> Though hogs may be left at liberty in the woods, where they frequently do good by rooting ; there can be no doubt that they ought to

be ringed before they are allowed to range meadows and pastures.

<sup>2</sup> *Shaktime*, or shakettime, is after harvest, when mast, &c. is to be picked up. The danger of having swine yoked when in woods is sufficiently clear, and is seldom practised.

33. Get home with thy brakes ere an (c) summer be gone <sup>1</sup>, Carriage of  
For teddered cattle, to sit thereupon ;  
To cover thy hovel, to brew and to bake,  
To lie in the bottom, where hovel ye make.
34. Now saw out thy timber, for board and for pale <sup>2</sup>, Saw out thy  
To have it unshaken, and ready for sale : timber.  
Bestow it, and stick it, and lay it aright,  
To find it in March, to be ready in plight.
35. Save slap of thy timber, for stable and sty <sup>3</sup>, Slabs of tim-  
For horse and for hog, the more cleanly to lie ; ber, &c.  
Save saw-dust and brick-dust, and ashes so fine,  
For alley to walk in, with neighbour of thine.
36. Keep safely and warily thine uttermost fence,  
With ope-gap and break hedge, do seldom dispense : Hedge break-  
Such run about prowlers, by night and by day, ers.  
See punished justly, for prowling away.

## VARIATION.

(c) *an* wanting.

<sup>1</sup> *Brakes* form a principal part of the firing in many places ; and stacks of them in bleak situations prove a convenient shelter for cattle. They are also good temporary fences, and thus answer a double purpose.

<sup>2</sup> *Shaken* timber is such as is full of clefts. *Bestow and stick it*, is laying the boards neatly on each

other, with sticks between, in order to admit the air.

<sup>3</sup> A *slap* or slab, is the outermost piece, cut off by the sawyer. *Saw-dust, ashes, &c.* make but indifferent walks : but may be useful where gravel is scarce, or must be purchased at a considerable expence.

## September's Husbandry.

Learn to  
know Hew  
Prowler.

37. At noon if it bloweth, at night if it shine,  
Out trudgeth Hew Make-shift, with hook and with  
line <sup>1</sup> ;  
Whiles Gillet, his blouse, is a milking thy cow,  
Sir Hew is a rigging thy gate, or thy (b) plow.

Black or red  
dogs.

38. Such walk with a black, or a red little cur <sup>2</sup>,  
That open will, quickly, if any thing stur :  
Then squalleth the master, or trudgeth away,  
And after dog runneth, as fast as he may.
39. Some prowleth for fuel, and some away rig <sup>2</sup>  
Fat goose, and the capon, duck, hen, and the pig :  
Some prowleth for acorns, to fat up their swine,  
For corn and for apples, and all that is thine.

*Thus endeth September's Husbandry.*

---

VARIATION.

' (b) the.

---

<sup>1</sup> Keep you fences in order, and your property secure ; and beware of idle and dishonest persons, who are always more ready to pilfer than to labour. The *hook and line* is a cord with a hook at its end to bind up any thing with, and carry it away.

<sup>2</sup> The poachers and pilferers of former days, it appears, are faith-

fully imitated by their successors in this shameful vocation. Our author judiciously recommends the infliction of punishment for small offences, which often prevents the commission of greater. It is the duty of every man who is injured, either intentionally or wantonly, to enforce the laws, for the sake of society in general.

# † OCTOBER'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XVII.

1. Lay dry up and round,  
For barley, thy ground.
2. Too late doth kill,  
Too soon is as ill.
3. Maids, little and great,  
Pick clean seed wheat.  
Good ground doth crave,  
Choice seed to have.  
Flails (*b*) lustily thwack,  
Lest plough-seed lack.
4. Seed first, go fetch,  
For edish, or etch.  
Soil perfectly know,  
Ere edish ye sow.
5. White wheat, if ye please,  
Sow now upon pease.  
Sow first the best,  
And then the rest.

## VARIATION.

(*b*) *flaies*, probably a misprint.

## October's Abstract.

6. Who soweth in rain,  
Hath weed for his pain ;  
But worse shall he speed,  
That soweth ill seed.
7. Now, better than later,  
Draw furrow for water.  
Keep crows, good son ;  
See fencing be done.
8. Each soil no vein,  
For every grain.  
Though soil be but bad,  
Some corn may be had.
9. Naught prove, naught crave,  
Naught venture, naught have.
10. One crop, and away,  
Some country may say.
11. All gravel and sand,  
Is not the best land.  
A rottenly mould,  
Is land worth gould.
12. Why wheat is smitten,  
Good lesson is written.
13. The judgment of some,  
How thistles do come.
14. A judgment right,  
Of land in plight.  
Land, all forlorn,  
Not good for corn.
15. Land barren doth bear,  
Small straw, short ear.
16. Here must thou read,  
For soil what seed.

17. 'Tis try'd every hour,  
Best grain, most flour.
18. Cross corn, much bran,  
The baker doth ban.
19. What croppers be,  
Here learn to see.
20. Few, after crop much,  
But noddies, and such.
21. Some woodland may crake,  
Three crops he may take.
22. First barley, then pease,  
Then wheat, if ye please.
23. Two crops and away,  
Most champion say.
24. Where barley did grow,  
Lay wheat to sow.  
Yet better, I think,  
Sow pease, after drink ;  
And then, if ye please,  
Sow wheat after pease.
25. What champion knows,  
That custom shews.
26. First barley ere rye,  
Then pease by and by ;  
Then fallow for wheat,  
Is husbandry great.
27. A remedy sent,  
Where pease lack vent :  
Fat pease-fed swine,  
For drover is fine.
28. Each diverse soil,  
Hath diverse toil.



## October's Abstract.

29. Some countries use,  
That some refuse.
30. For wheat, ill land,  
Where water doth stand.  
Sow pease or dredge,  
Below in that redge<sup>1</sup>.
31. Sow acorns to prove,  
That timber do love.
32. Sow hastings now,  
If land it allow.
33. Learn soon to get,  
A good quickset.
34. For fear of the worst,  
Make fat away first.
35. Fat that no more,  
Ye keep for store.
36. Hide carren in grave,  
Less noiance to have.
37. Hog measeled (*c*) kill,  
For Fleming that will.
38. With peasebolt and brake,  
Some brëw and bake.
39. Old corn worth gold,  
So keep as it shōld.

---

VARIATION.

(*c*) measeld.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Redge*, for *ridge* or *land*. Once for all, it may suffice to observe, that the old poets found no difficulty in forcing words to yield to their rhymes; each in this respect pre-

scribing a law for himself. Hence it would be ridiculous to expect authority, for every deviation from the usual mode of orthography.

## October's Abstract.

29

40. Much profit is reapt,  
By sloes well kept.
41. Keep sloes upon bow,  
For flix of thy cow.
42. Of verjuice be sure,  
Poor cattle to cure.

*Thus endeth October's Abstract, agreeing with October's  
Husbandry.*

### ¶ OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Ciss, have an eye  
To boar in sty.  
By malt, ill kept,  
Small profit is reapt.

Friend, ringle thy hog,  
For fear of a dog.  
Rye-straw up stack,  
Lest Thacker do lack.

Wheat-straw, dry save,  
For cattle to have.  
Wheat-chaff, lay up dry  
In safety to lie.

Make handsome a bin,  
For chaff to lie in.

(Seed thresh'd) thou shalt,  
Thresh barley to malt.  
Cut bushes to hedge,  
Fence meadow, and redge.

## October's Abstract.

Stamp crabs that may,  
 For rotting away.  
 Make verjuice and perry,  
 Sow kernell and berry.

Now gather up fruit,  
 Of every suit.  
 Marsh wall, too slight,  
 Strength now, or good (*b*) night.

Mend walls of mud,  
 For now it is good.  
 Where soil is of sand,  
 Quickset out of hand.

To plots not full,  
 Add bramble and hull<sup>1</sup>.  
 For set no bar,  
 Whilst month hath an R.

Like note thou shalt,  
 For making of malt.  
 Brew none to last,  
 Till winter be past.

*Here ends October's short Remembrances.*

---

 VARIATION:

(*b*) *god*, evidently a misprint.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Hull*, which is applied to the covering of any fruit or grain, in this place seems to mean thorns, or haws the fruit of thorns, or perhaps holly. Chaucer uses *hullfere* for holly.

# ¶ OCTOBER'S HUSBANDRY.

## CHAP. XVIII.

October good blast,  
To blow the hog mast.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. Now lay up thy barley-land, dry as ye can <sup>1</sup>,  
Whenever ye sow it, so look for it than :  
Get daily beforehand, be never behind,  
Lest winter preventing, do alter thy mind. Lay up barley  
land.
2. Who layeth up fallow, too soon or too wet <sup>2</sup>,  
With noiances many, doth barley beset :  
For weed and the water so soaketh and sucks,  
That goodness from either, it utterly plucks.
3. Green rye in September, when timely thou hast <sup>3</sup>,  
October for wheat-sowing calleth as fast :  
If weather will suffer, this counsel I give,  
Leave sowing of wheat, before Hallowmas eve. Wheat sowing.

---

<sup>1</sup> " Laying up land," in the first ploughing for barley, is covering the ridge baulk by two opposite furrows ; so that the water may have the easier fall. This is advised to be done early, lest the weather and other circumstances should prevent its accomplishment.

<sup>2</sup> It is evident that winter-fallowing is here intended ; or bringing up the ground, to what is called a barley season.

<sup>3</sup> Rye being usually committed to a light soil, is best to be sown before the rains. The proper time of sowing wheat depends on the soil

Sow eddish  
betimes.

4. Where wheat upon eddish ye mind to bestow<sup>1</sup>,  
Let that be the first of the wheat ye do sow :  
He seemeth to heart it, and comfort to bring,  
That giveth it comfort of Michaelmas spring.

Best wheat  
first sown.

5. White wheat upon pease-etch doth grow as he  
would<sup>2</sup>,  
But fallow is best, if we did as we should :  
Yet where, how, and when, ye intend to begin,  
Let ever the finest, be first sown in.
6. Who soweth in rain, he shall reap it with tears<sup>3</sup>,  
Who soweth in harms, he is ever in fears :  
Who soweth ill seed, or defraudeth his land,  
Hath eye-sore abroad, with a corsie at hand.
7. Seed husbandly sown, water-furrow thy ground,  
That rain when it cometh, may run away round :  
Then stir about *Nicoll*, with arrow and bow<sup>4</sup>,  
Take penny for killing of every crow.

and the condition of the land. The middle of August is not too early in some situations, nor the middle of December too late in others. October, however, is the month in which this important operation is chiefly performed.

<sup>1</sup> *Eddish*, or *etch*, is where corn or pulse has grown the year before. The previous crop having exhausted the ground, the seed ought to be sown the more early, in order that the plant may gain strength before winter.

<sup>2</sup> White wheat is more tender and sooner ripe than red wheat; and therefore should, for obvious reasons, be first sown.

<sup>3</sup> These maxims are confirmed by the experience of all ages, and need no explanation. He who neglects them, must expect to encounter inward vexation, and ridicule from others.

<sup>4</sup> Though the gun was in use in our author's days, it appears from several passages that the sling, and the bow and arrows were employed for

## *A Digression to the Usage of divers Countries concerning Tillage.*

8. Each soil hath no liking, of every grain <sup>1</sup>,  
Nor barley and wheat, is for every vein :  
Yet know I no country, so barren of soil,  
But some kind of corn may be gotten with toil.
9. In *Brantham*, where rye, but no barley did grow <sup>2</sup>,  
Good barley I had, as a many did know.  
Five seam of an acre, I truly was paid,  
For thirty load muck, of each acre so laid.
10. In *Suffolk* again, whereas wheat never grew,  
Good husbandry used, good wheat land I knew <sup>3</sup>,  
This proverb, experience long ago gave,  
“ That nothing who practiseth, nothing shall have.”
11. As gravel and sand, is for rye and not wheat <sup>4</sup>,  
(Or yieldeth her burden, to t'one the more great)  
So peason and barley delight not in sand ;  
But rather in clay, or in rottener land.

killing birds. The policy, however, of reducing the number of birds too much, particularly rooks, has been justly disputed.

<sup>1</sup> “ Consult the genius of the soil,” cannot be too often repeated; yet no soil is so unpropitious as not to be grateful for good management.

<sup>2</sup> *Brantham* parish, in *Essex*, in which *Catwade* lies, where *Tusser* first commenced farmer. See his *Life*. A seam is a quarter.

<sup>3</sup> To the very valuable publications under the sanction of the Board

of Agriculture, I beg leave to refer for an account of manures, and the various modes of meliorating the soil. Judicious experiments and a spirited practice, are the very soul of agriculture: He who does nothing, can expect nothing.

<sup>4</sup> These observations are not confirmed by the experience and practice of the best judges. Wheat is certainly better adapted to stiff land than barley is; even pease delight in a free, though somewhat rich, soil.



## October's Husbandry.

12. Wheat sometime is steely, or burnt as it grows <sup>1</sup>,  
For pride or for poverty, practice so knows.  
Too lusty of courage, for wheat doth not well,  
Nor after Sir Peeler he loveth to dwell.
13. Much wetness, hog-rooting, and land out of heart,  
Makes thistles a number, forthwith to upstart :  
If thistles so growing, prove lusty and long <sup>2</sup>,  
It signifieth land to be hearty (c) and strong.
14. As land full of tilth, and in hearty good plight,  
Yields blade to a length, and encreaseth in might ;  
So crop upon crop, on (b c) whose courage we doubt <sup>3</sup>,  
Yields blade for a brag, but it holdeth not out.
15. The straw and the ear, to have bigness and length,  
Betokeneth land, to be good and in strength :  
If ear be but short, and the straw be but small,  
It signifieth bareness, and barren withall.

---

 VARIATIONS.

(c) lusty.

(b c) upon.

---

<sup>1</sup> Wheat does not thrive well, either on very poor or very rich land. If the land is *peeled*, that is spent, the grain is poor and *steely*: if too full of manure, it is apt to run to straw. Some of the best farmers manure for a neutral crop, where they mean next to sow wheat.

<sup>2</sup> Though thistles are an indication of a naturally good soil, they ought to be eradicated with care ;

not only as exhausters of the land, but as destroyers of the crop.

<sup>3</sup> Over-cropping is the common but mischievous practice of avaricious farmers. It may answer for a few years ; but dooms the ground at last to almost irrecoverable sterility, especially on light soils, which prevail in most parts of this kingdom.

16. White wheat or else red, red rivet or white <sup>1</sup>,  
Far passeth all other, for land that is light ;  
White pollard or red, that so richly is set,  
For land that is heavy, is best ye can get.
17. Main wheat that is mixed, with white and with red,  
Is next to the best, in the market-man's head :  
So Turkey or Purkey wheat many do love,  
Because it is floury, as others above.
18. Gray wheat is the grossest, yet good for the clay,  
Though worst for the market, as farmer will say ;  
Much like unto rye, be his properties found,  
Coarse flouër, much bran, and a peeler of ground.
19. Oats, rye, or else barley, and wheat that is gray <sup>2</sup>,  
Brings land out of comfort, and soon to decay :  
One after another, no comfort between,  
Is crop upon crop, as will quickly be seen.
20. Still crop upon crop, many farmers do take  
And reap little profit, for greediness sake.  
Though bread-corn and drink-corn, such croppers do  
stand <sup>3</sup>,  
Count peason or brank, as a comfort to land.

Crop upon  
crop.

<sup>1</sup> The varieties of wheat are now much more numerous than at the period when Tusser wrote. On this subject, local knowledge and experience are the only guides, and therefore it is needless to enlarge on in this place.

<sup>2</sup> The kinds of grain here enumerated, are well known to wear out the land, if the crops are too often repeated. He who exhausts

the soil, in which he has a certain interest, is greedy without gain. Leases, without doubt, are the best preventives of over-cropping as well as of cross-cropping.

<sup>3</sup> "Bread-corn and drink-corn," mean wheat and barley. *Brank*, or buck-wheat, is a good meliorating crop, as well as applicable to other important purposes, and is less used than it deserves to be.

## October's Husbandry.

21. Good land that is severall, crops may have three <sup>1</sup>,  
 In champion country, it may not so be ;  
 T'one taketh his season, as commoners may,  
 The tother with reason, may otherwise say.
22. Some useth at first, a good fallow to make <sup>2</sup>,  
 To sow thereon barley, the better to take.  
 Next that to sow pease, and of that to sow wheat,  
 Then fallow again, or lie lay for thy neat.
23. First rye, and then barley, the champion says,  
 Or wheat before barley, be champion ways :  
 But drink before bread-corn, with Middlesex men ;  
 Then lay on more compas, and fallow again <sup>3</sup>.
24. Where barley ye sow, after rye or else wheat,  
 If land be unlusty, the crop is not great :  
 So lose ye your cost, to your corsie and smart,  
 And land (overburdened) is clean out of heart.

<sup>1</sup> Enclosed lands may be used according to the strength of the soil : in common field, or champion, custom is to direct ; and here two crops and a fallow are in frequent use, from the necessity that the most spirited farmer is under of following the course of his neighbours.

<sup>2</sup> Except in common fields, fallowing is justly exploded, by good farmers. When the land is once cleaned and brought into proper

heart, it is not necessary, and cannot be profitable. It will be seen, however, from the observations of our author, how pertinaciously some still adhere to the practice of former times.

<sup>3</sup> *Compas* is compost. Where the staple wants enriching, or the soil neutralizing, compost does good ; but dung that has lain to rot, communicates little vigour to the crop.

25. Exceptions take, of the champion land,  
From lying along, from that at thy hand :  
(Just by) ye may comfort, with compas at will ;  
Far off, ye must comfort, with favor and skill <sup>1</sup>.
26. Where rye or else wheat, either barley ye sow,  
Let codware be next, thereupon for to grow <sup>2</sup> :  
Thus having two crops, whereof codware is t'one,  
Thou hast the less need, to lay cost thereupon.
27. Some far fro the market, delight not in pease <sup>3</sup>,  
For that ev'ry chapman, they seem not to please :  
If vent of the market-place, serve thee not well,  
Set hogs up a fatting, to drover to sell.
28. Two crops of a fallow, enricheth the plough <sup>4</sup>,  
Though t'one be of pease, it is land good enough :  
One crop and a fallow, some soil will abide,  
Where, if ye go further, lay profit aside.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Favor and skill" may mean laying the land down, fallowing, folding, sowing meliorating crops as turnips, not in use in Tusser's days, buckwheat, &c. The latter, when ploughed in, is an excellent and cheap manure for distant poor lands.

<sup>2</sup> *Codware* is used to express beans or pease. The former are well suited to a stiff soil, the latter to a lighter mould.

<sup>3</sup> In the present times there is no difficulty in selling pease ; and they will generally produce more profit

than if applied to the feeding of hogs. Valuable as the flesh of these animals is, if fed principally with grain or pulse, they yield little profit. Roots, such as potatoes, &c. begin now to be generally substituted in bringing swine forward ; and such are found to answer at much less cost.

<sup>4</sup> "Two crops of a fallow" might possibly answer ; but "one crop and a fallow" must at all times have been a ruinous application of land.

29. Where peason ye had, and a fallow thereon,  
Sow wheat ye may well, without dung thereupon ;  
New broken up land, or with water opprest <sup>1</sup> :  
Or overmuch duned, for wheat is not best.

30. Where water all winter, annoyeth too much,  
Bestow not thy wheat, upon land that is such ;  
But rather sow oats, or else bullimong there <sup>2</sup>,  
Grey peason, or runcivals, fitches, or tare.

Sowing of  
acorns.

31. Sow acorns, ye owners that timber do love <sup>3</sup>,  
Sow haw and rye with them, the better to prove :  
If cattle or coney may enter to crop,  
Young oak is in danger, of losing his top.

Sowing of  
Hastings or  
Fulhams.

32. Who peasecods delighteth to have with the first <sup>4</sup>,  
If now ye do sow them, I think it not worst ;  
The greener thy peason, and warmer the room,  
More lusty the layer, more plenty they come.

Brambles and  
haws.

33. Go plow up or delve up, advised with skill.  
The breadth of a ridge, and in length as ye will ;

<sup>1</sup> Sowing of wheat on the back of clover-leys is found to be an excellent practice. On greensward, which alone was known before the introduction of artificial grasses, it is less suitable.

<sup>2</sup> *Bullimong* is a mixture of oats, pease, and vetches, now seldom seen or heard of. *Fitches*, or vetches, are well known.

<sup>3</sup> This advice is excellent ; and it

is to be lamented that so few acorns are sown. The first year a thin crop of rye will rather protect than injure them ; afterwards the plantation should be fenced, even though haws are sown with them.

<sup>4</sup> *Pease*, of whatever kind, if sown at this season of the year, must be a very casualty crop, as depending wholly on the mildness or severity of the weather.

Where speedy quickset, for a fence ye will draw,  
To sow in the seed of the bramble and haw<sup>1</sup>.

34. Through plenty of acorns, the porkling to fat<sup>2</sup>  
Not taken in season, may perish by that :  
If rattling or swelling, get once to the throat,  
Thou lovest thy porkling, a crown to a goat.  
A disease in fat hogs.
35. Whatever thing fat is, again if it fall,  
Thou vent'rest the thing, and the fatness withall :  
The fatter the better, to sell or to kill,  
But not to continue, make proof if ye will.  
Not too fat, for rearing.
36. Whatever thing dieth, go bury or burn,  
For tainting of ground, or a worser ill turn ;  
Such pestilent smell, of a carrenly thing,  
To cattle and people, great peril may bring.  
Burying of dead cattle.
37. Thy measeled bacon-hog, sow, or thy boar<sup>3</sup>,  
Shut up for to heal, for infecting thy store :  
Or kill it for bacon, or souse it to sell,  
For Flemming that loves it so daintily well.  
Measled hogs.

<sup>1</sup> It is the opinion of Hilman that brambles might be planted with advantage, and trained as vines, for their fruit. *Haws*, it is almost needless to say, are the fruit of the hawthorn.

<sup>2</sup> Acorns are too scarce to be a common food for hogs at present; and if too green, or wet, they are apt to occasion the disease here mentioned, which, however, it is said,

may be cured, by giving the animal hot wash, and opening the swelling when ripe.

<sup>3</sup> The measles in hogs arise from their being deprived of water. On that part of the coast where our author lived, many Flemings had settled; and their language and customs, as I am credibly informed by intelligent natives, may still be traced in Essex, Suffolk, and Nor-



Straw-wisps  
and pease-  
bolts.

38. With straw-wisp and pease-bolt, with fern and the  
brake<sup>1</sup>,

For sparing of fuel, some brew and do bake ;  
And heateth their copper, for seething of grains :—  
Good servant rewarded, refuseth no pains.

Old wheat  
better than  
new.

39. Good bread-corn and drink-corn full twenty weeks  
kept<sup>2</sup>,

Is better than new, that at harvest is reapt :  
But foisty the bread-corn, and bowd-eaten malt,  
For health or for profit, find noisome thou shalt.

40. By th'end of October, go gather up sloes,  
Have thou in a readiness, plenty of those ;  
And keep them in bed straw, or still on the bough<sup>3</sup>,  
To stay both the flix, of thyself and thy cow.

A medicine  
for the cow-  
flix.

41. Seeth water, and plump therein plenty of sloes,  
Mix chalk that is dried, in powder with those ;  
Which so, if ye give, with the water and chalk,  
Thou makest the lax fro thy cow away walk.

folk. It is evident that they were not very delicate in the choice of their food.

<sup>1</sup> If I mistake not, *light-fire*, as it is termed, is still used in Norfolk. Seething of grains in cold weather, no doubt contributes to the improvement of the hog.

<sup>2</sup> Sweating, as it is called, in the mow or in the stack, makes the flour separate more easily from

the bran ; and barley works and takes the water better after this natural process. *Bowd-eaten*, in the Norfolk dialect, is eaten with weevils.

<sup>3</sup> Sloes gently baked in an oven are best preserved. They are an excellent and cheap remedy for laxity of the bowels, in men or cattle, if judiciously used.

42. Be siür of vergis (a gallon at least <sup>1</sup>),  
 So good for the kitchen, so needfull for beast :  
 It helpeth thy cattle, so feeble and faint,  
 If timely such cattle, with it thou acquaint.

*Thus endeth October's Husbandry.*

---

<sup>1</sup> It has been observed that an indulgent Providence has given to each country the fruits and medicines, which are necessary for its inhabitants : if so, crab-juice or verjuice might supply the place of the more costly foreign acids.

---

## NOVEMBER'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XIX.

1. Let hog, once fat,  
Lose nothing of that,  
When mast is gone,  
Hog falleth anon.  
Still fat up some,  
Till Shrovetide come.  
Now pork and souse,  
Bears tack in house.
2. Put barley a malting,  
Lay flitches a salting.  
Through folly, too beastly \*,  
Much bacon is reasty.
3. Some winnow, some fan,  
Some cast that can.  
In casting provide,  
For seed lay aside.
4. Thresh barley thou shalt,  
For chapman to malt ;

## VARIATION.

\* As Tusser is pretty correct in his rhymes, he probably wrote *beasty*, originally.

- Else thresh no more,  
But for thy store.
5. Till March, thresh wheat,  
But as ye do eat ;  
Lest baker forsake it,  
If foistiness take it.
6. No chaff in bin,  
Makes horse look thin.
7. Sow Hastings now,  
That Hastings allow.
8. They buy it full dear,  
In winter that rear.
9. Few fowls, less swine,  
Rear now, friend mine !
10. What loss, what sturs,  
Through ravening curs.
11. Make Martilmas beef,—  
Dear meat is a thief.
12. Set garlike and pease,  
Saint Edmond to please.
13. When rain takes place,  
To threshing apace.
14. Mad brain, too rough,  
Mars all at plough,  
With flail and whips,  
Fat hen, short skips.
15. Some threshing by task,  
Will steal, and not ask.  
Such thresher at night,  
Walks seldom home light.  
Some corn away lag,  
In bottle and bag.

## November's Abstract.

- Some steals (*a*) for a jest,  
Eggs out of the nest.
16. Lay stover up dry,  
In order to lie.  
Poor bullock doth crave,  
Fresh straw to have.
17. Make weekly up floor,  
Though thresher do lour.  
Lay grain in loft,  
And turn it oft.
18. For muck regard,  
Make clean foul yard.  
Lay straw to rot,  
In wat'ry plot.
19. Headland up plow,  
For compas enow.
20. For herbs good store,  
Trench garden more.
21. At midnight try  
Foul privies to fye.
22. Rid chimney of soot,  
From top to the foot.
23. In stable put now,  
Thy horses for plow.
24. Good horsekeeper will,  
Lay muck upon hill.
25. Cut mole-hills, that stand  
So thick upon land.

*Thus endeth November's Abstract, agreeing with November's Husbandry.*

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) steal.

OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Get pole, boy mine !  
Beat haws to swine  
Drive hog to the wood,  
Brake-roots be good.

For mischief that falls,  
Look well to marsh walls.  
Dry layer get neat,  
And plenty of meat.

Curst cattle that nurteth,  
Poor wennel soon hurteth,  
Good neighbour mine,  
Ring well thy swine.

Such winter may serve,  
Hog ringled will sterve.  
In frost keep dog,  
From hurting of hog,

*Here ends November's short Remembrances.*

---



# ¶ NOVEMBER'S HUSBANDRY.

## CHAP. XX.

November take flail ;  
Let ship no more sail.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

Slaughter-  
time.

1. At Hallontide, slaughter-time entereth in <sup>1</sup>,  
And then doth the husbandman's feasting begin :  
From thence unto Shrovetide, kill now and then some,  
Their offall for houshold the better will come.

Dredge is oats  
and barley.

2. Thy dredge and thy barley go thresh out to malt <sup>2</sup>,  
Let maltster be cunning, else lose it thou shalt :

---

<sup>1</sup> Though, in some counties, pork is killed, more or less, in every month of the year, the proper season for slaughtering hogs is undoubtedly from November to Shrovetide ; because corn to fat them is most plenty from harvest till that time, and the flesh is most easily and certainly cured for keeping.

Bacon and pork, which are still the principal support of farmers and their servants in this country, ap-

pear to have been so, at an early period ; and it would be difficult to find a substitute so economical, and so well adapted for labourers.

<sup>2</sup> *Dredge*, an incongruous mixture of oats and barley, is now seldom heard of for malting, or otherwise. The encrease of a bushel in a *seam*, or quarter, is reckoned moderate, though even that quantity shews that the profits of the maltster are considerable.

Th' encrease of a seam, is a bushel for store,  
Bad else is the barley, or huswife much more.

3. Some useth to winnow, some useth to fan,  
Some useth to cast it, as clean as they can.  
For seed go and cast it ; for malting not so <sup>1</sup>,  
But get out the cockle, and then let it go. Winnowing,  
fanning, and  
casting.
4. Thresh barley as yet, but as need shall require,  
Fresh threshed for stover, thy cattle desire <sup>2</sup>;  
And therefore that threshing, forbear as ye may,  
Till Candlemas coming, for sparing of hay. Threshing of  
of barley.
5. Such wheat as ye keep, for the baker to buy,  
Unthreshed till March, in the sheaf let it lie <sup>3</sup> ;  
Lest foistiness take it, if sooner ye thresh it,  
Although by oft turning, ye seem to refresh it. Threshing of  
wheat.

<sup>1</sup> In cleaning corn for seed, *casting*, or throwing it with a shovel from one heap to another, in order to select the heaviest grains, which will always go farthest, is an excellent practice ; but in malting, this is not necessary, as the light grains and seeds of weeds may be skimmed off in the cistern. *Cockle*, indeed, is supposed to render beer more heady, though certainly less wholesome.

<sup>2</sup> *Stover*, or fodder of straw, is best for cattle from the hands of the thresher. It is needless to expatiate on the propriety of saving hay, as it is the object of every sensible

farmer, as far as is compatible with the thriving of his cattle.

<sup>3</sup> Wheat is well known to work better in grinding and baking, after it has undergone a natural heat in the rick or mow. Wheat that is threshed early keeps with some difficulty. Next to the sheaf, however, the frequent use of the shovel, and free ventilation, is the most effectual way to preserve the material of the staff of life. By turning and airing at short intervals it is kept sweet and sound in the moist climates of Holland, and on the coasts of the Baltic.

## November's Husbandry.

Chaff of corn.

6. Save chaff of the barley, of wheat, and of rye (a)<sup>1</sup>,  
From feathers and foistiness, where it doth lie;  
Which mixed with corn, being sifted of dust,  
Go give to thy cattle, when serve them ye must.
7. Green peason, or Hastings, at Hallontide sow<sup>2</sup>,  
In hearty good soil, he requireth to grow :  
Grey peason, or runcivals, cheerly to stand,  
At Candlemas sow, with a plentiful hand.
8. Leave latewardly rearing, keep now no more swine<sup>3</sup>,  
But such as thou may'st with the offall of thine.  
Except ye have wherewith to fat them away,  
The fewer thou keepest, keep better ye may.
9. To rear up much poultry, and want the barn door,  
Is nought for the poulter, and worse for the poor;  
So now to keep hogs, and to starve them for meat,  
Is, as to keep dogs, for to bawl in the street.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) Stanzas 6, 7, 8, 9, and 10, not in this edition.

<sup>1</sup> Chaff, which is so valuable an addition to corn, whether natural, or what is so called when artificially made, should no doubt be kept free from dust and extraneous substances. Feathers must unquestionably be very noisome to cattle, especially horses; but where hen-houses are distinct, there is little danger of their being mixed with provender.

<sup>2</sup> Early pease, for domestic use, are doubtless worth trying for; but

at best they are an uncertain crop at this season, and ought not to be attempted on a large scale.

<sup>3</sup> Young pigs can scarcely be profitable in cold weather, and poultry perhaps less so. By our author mentioning "the poor," it is probable he alluded to a custom of allowing taskers the run of a pig or two in the farm-yard; a custom which for obvious reasons has become obsolete.

10. As cat a good mouser, is needfull in house,  
Because for her commons she killeth the mouse ;  
So ravening curs, as a many do keep <sup>1</sup>,  
Makes master want meat, and his dog to kill sheep.
  
11. (For Easter) at Martilmas, hang up a beef <sup>2</sup>,  
For stall-fed and pease-fed, play pickpurse the thief :  
With that and the like, ere an (c) grass beef come in,  
Thy folk shall look cheerly, when others look thin. Martilmas  
beef.
  
12. Set garlike and beans at St. Edmond the king <sup>3</sup>,  
The moon in the wane, thereon hangeth a thing :  
Th' encrease of a pottle, (well proved of some,)  
Shall pleasure thy houshold, ere peasecod time come. ¶  
Set garlike  
and beans.
  
13. When rain is a let, to thy doings abroad,  
Set threshers a threshing, to lay on good load : Threshing.

---

## VARIATION.

(c) *an wanting.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Among the few patriotic taxes we have to boast of, may be reckoned that on dogs, which, when kept by the poor, are equally a nuisance and a loss.

<sup>2</sup> Hung, or smoke-dried beef, was formerly much more in use than at present. The facility of procuring fresh meat, and the indigestible nature of this kind of food, have justly brought it into disrepute.

<sup>3</sup> St. Edmund's Day is the 20th of November, and perhaps may be as proper for planting garlike and beans, as any other; but why the moon should be "in the wane," we are not informed, though, according to our author, "thereon hangeth a thing." Because the moon has an influence on the tides and the weather, she was formerly supposed to extend her power over all nature.

## November's Husbandry.

Thresh clean, ye must bid them, though lesser they  
earn <sup>1</sup>,

And looking to thrive, have an eye to thy barn.

Cattle beaters. 14. Take heed to thy man, in his fury and heat <sup>2</sup>,  
With plough-staff and whip-stock for maiming thy  
neat,

To thresher, for hurting of cow with his flail,  
Or making thy hen, to play tapple up tail.

Corn stealers. 15. Some pilfering thresher will walk with a staff <sup>3</sup>,  
Will carry home corn, as it is in the chaff;  
And some in his bottle of leather so great,  
Will carry home, daily, both barley and wheat.

Keep dry thy straw. 16. If house-room will serve thee, lay stover up dry,  
And every sort, by itself for to lie;  
Or stack it for litter, if room be too poor <sup>4</sup>,  
And thatch out the residue, noying thy (a) door.

### VARIATION.

(a) the.

<sup>1</sup> Notwithstanding the penalties to which they are liable, threshers are too apt to do their work in a slovenly manner, especially if paid for by the great. But the encroaching use of threshing-machines, will soon, it is to be hoped, put an end to this very laborious employment, and its consequent disadvantages. In every case, however, if a farmer "looks to thrive," he must have "an eye to his barn."

<sup>2</sup> To watch the propensities of servants, and to correct their cruel or vicious habits, is no less the duty

than the interest of masters. Brutality of every kind should be adequately punished by the laws.

<sup>3</sup> Unfortunately for the public, the race of pilferers is not yet extinct. The leathern bottle was a very convenient vehicle for a dishonest tasker. It is now seldom seen.

<sup>4</sup> Stover, except what is wanted for the use of the cattle, or for thatching, had better, according to modern usage, be spread about the yard, and trodden into dung, than stacked up.

17. Cause weekly thy thresher, to make up his floor <sup>1</sup>,  
Though slothfull and pilferer thereat do lour :  
Take tub for a season, take sack for a shift ;  
Yet garner for grain, is the better for thrift.
18. All manner of straw, that is scattered in yard,  
Good husbandly husbands have daily regard,  
In pit, full of water, the same to bestow <sup>2</sup>,  
Where lying to rot, thereof profit may grow.
19. Now plough up thy headland, or delve it with spade <sup>3</sup>,  
Where otherwise profit but little is made ;  
And cast it up high, upon hillocks to stand,  
That winter may rot it, to compas thy land.
20. If garden require it (a) now trench it ye may <sup>4</sup>,  
One trench not a yard, from another go lay ;

Every week,  
rid thy barn  
floor.

Digging of  
headlands.

Trenching of  
garden.

## VARIATION.

(a) wants *it* : consequently the preceding word was written and pronounced *requièr*.

<sup>1</sup> By making up the floor, weekly, less waste is committed, and less temptation given to those who are disposed to be dishonest.

<sup>2</sup> The economy of farm-yards is now better understood. The urine of animals and the essence of their dung ought carefully to be preserved ; but aqueous fluids should be carried off by channels, surrounding the yard, and not suffered to mix with the manure, instead of throwing it into pits full of water to rot.

<sup>3</sup> Headlands, on which the plough turns, must of necessity be tilled last ; and it appears from Tusser, that they were sometimes used only to form compo the adjoining lands.

<sup>4</sup> Trenching at this season, as a preparative for the spring crops, is a very beneficial practice ; as it destroys weeds, and pulverizes the soil by exposing it to the action of the winter frosts.



## November's Husbandry.

Which being well filled with muck by and by,  
Go cover with mould, for a season to lie.

Cleansing of  
privies.

21. Foul privies are now to be cleansed and fy'd <sup>1</sup>,  
Let night be appointed, such baggage to hide ;  
Which buried in garden, in trenches a-low,  
Shall make very many things better to grow.

Sooty chim-  
nies.

22. The chimney all sooty, would now be made clean <sup>2</sup>,  
For fear of mischances, too oftentimes seen :  
Old chimney and sooty, if fier once take,  
By burning and breaking, some mischief may make.

Put horse into  
stable.

23. When ploughing is ended, and pasture not great,  
Then stable thy horses, and tend them with meat :  
Let season be dry, when ye take them to house <sup>3</sup>,  
For danger of nits, or for fear of a louse.

Saving of  
dung.

24. Lay compas up, handsomely, round on a hill <sup>4</sup>,  
To walk in thy yard, at thy pleasure and will ;

<sup>1</sup> Ordure, mixed with straw, fern, or other vegetables, and even with earth, makes the richest of all manures. Used singly, it is too strong and fiery.

<sup>2</sup> This prudential caution respecting chimneys, is properly enforced by legal penalties, if they are suffered to fire. But the soot of itself is worth saving. It is one of the greatest improvers of cold mossy grass-lands ; and its value is now

well understood, though our author seems to have had no idea of its application as a manure.

<sup>3</sup> Whether it is most adviseable to take horses to house in wet or dry weather, depends on circumstances. It is leanness and ill-dressing that occasion nits and lice.

<sup>4</sup> It has been questioned, on very substantial grounds, if throwing up dung and keeping it to rot in the yard, is the best mode of rendering

More compas it maketh, and handsome the plot,  
If horse-keeper, daily, forgetteth it not.

25. Make hillocks of mole-hills, in field thoroughout',  
And so to remain, till the year go about :  
Make also the like, whereas plots be too high,  
All winter a rotting, for compas to lie.

*Thus endeth November's Husbandry.*

---

it productive ; but keeping the foot-paths clear is equally conducive to pleasure and profit.

' \* *Mole*, or rather *ant hills*, are best levelled, by taking off the turf, spreading the superfluous mould, and when the insects are destroyed, covering the space again with the

green sward. Ant-hills, as encreasing the vegetable surface, have been considered, by slovenly farmers, who wanted an excuse, as an advantage ; but their only utility seems to be in affording shelter for lambs, and it is not necessary that they should be very numerous for this purpose.

---

## DECEMBER'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XXI.

1. No season to hedge,  
Get beetle and wedge.  
Cleave logs now all,  
For kitchen and hall.
2. Dull working tools,  
Soon courage cools.
3. Leave off tittle tattle,  
And look to thy cattle.  
Serve young poor elves,  
Alone by themselves.
4. Warm bath for neat,  
Worth half their meat.  
The elder that nurteth,  
The younger soon hurteth.
5. House cow that is old,  
While winter doth hold.
6. But once in a day,  
To drink and to play.
7. Get Trusty to serve,  
Lest cattle do sterve.  
And such as in deed,  
May help at a need.
8. Observe this law,  
In serving out straw.

9. In walking about,  
Good fork spy out.
10. At full, and at change,  
Spring tides are strange.  
If doubt ye fray,  
Drive cattle away.
11. Dank ling, forgot,  
Will quickly rot.
12. Here learn and try,  
To turn it, and dry.
13. Now stocks remove,  
That orchards love.
14. Set stock to grow,  
Too thick, nor too low.  
Set now, as they come,  
Both cherry and plum.
15. Sheep, hog, and ill beast,  
Bids stock to ill feast.
16. At Christmas is good,  
To let thy horse blood.
17. Mark here what rabble  
Of evils in stable.
18. Mix well (old gaff)  
Horse-corn with chaff,  
Let Jack nor Gill,  
Fetch corn at will.
19. Some countries gift (*a*),  
To make hard shift.

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) Verses 19 and 20 not in this edition.

## December's Abstract.

- Some cattle well fare,  
 With fitches and tare.  
 Fitches and tares,  
 Be Norfolk wares.
20. Tares thresh'd with skill,  
 Bestow as ye will.
21. Hide strawberries, wife,  
 To save their life.
22. Knot, border, and all,  
 Now cover ye shall.
23. Help bees' sweet coney,  
 With liquor and honey.
24. Get campers a ball,  
 To camp therewithall.

*Thus endeth December's Abstract, agreeing with December's Husbandry.*

### ¶ OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Let Christmas spy,  
 Yard clean to lie.  
 No labour, no sweat;  
 Go labour for heat.

Feed doves, but kill not,  
 If 'stroy them, ye will not.  
 Fat hog, ere ye kill it,  
 Or else ye do spill it.

Put ox in stall,  
 Ere ox do fall.  
 Who seetheth her grains,  
 Hath profit for pains.

Rid garden of mallow,  
Plant willow and sallow.

Let boar life render,  
See brawn sod tender.  
For wife, fruit buy,  
For Christmas pie.

Ill bread and ill drink,  
Makes many ill think ;  
Both meat and cost,  
Ill drest, half lost.

Who hath wherewithall,  
May cheer when he shall :  
But charged man,  
Must cheer as he can.

*Here ends December's short Remembrances.*



# 1 DECEMBER'S HUSBANDRY.

## CHAP. XXII.

O dirty December,  
For Christmas remember.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

Beetle and  
wedges.

1. WHEN frost will not suffer to dike and to hedge<sup>1</sup>,  
Then get thee a heat, with thy beetle and wedge :  
Once Hallowmas come, and a fire in the hall,  
Such slivers do well for to lie by the wall.

Grinding-  
stone and  
whetstone.

2. Get grindstone and whetstone for tool that is dull<sup>2</sup>,  
Or often be letted, and fret belly full :  
A wheel-barrow also be ready to have,  
At hand of thy servant, thy compas to save.

---

<sup>1</sup> The scarcity of wood, and the facility with which coals may now be procured in most parts of the kingdom, by means of canals, have rendered the use of the beetle and the wedge less necessary; though they ought still to be an appendage in every farm-house. In frosty weather,

the farmer, in our days, is most commonly and advantageously employed in carrying out dung from his yard.

<sup>2</sup> The grindstone saves time as well as trouble, if erected on the spot, nor is a whetstone less necessary. As for a wheel-barrow, it can never be out of use.

3. Give cattle their fodder in plot dry and warm <sup>1</sup>,  
And count them for mixing, or other like harm :  
Young colts with thy wennels together go serve,  
Lest lurch'd by others, they happen to sterue.

Serving of  
cattle.

4. The rack is commended for saving of dung <sup>2</sup>,  
To set as the old cannot mischief the young.  
In tempest (the wind being northly or east)  
Warm barth, under hedge, is a succour (*b*) to beast.

Woodland  
country.

5. The housing of cattle, while winter doth hold <sup>3</sup> ;  
Is good for all such as are feeble and old :  
It saveth much compas, and many a sleep,  
And spareth the pasture for walk of thy sheep.

Housing of  
cattle.

## VARIATION.

(*b*) sucker.

<sup>1</sup> Fothering in dry and warm situations, and spreading the provender so that the younger and weaker animals may come in for their share, is a precept dictated by common sense. A newly-invented and excellent plan for a cattle-shed, which deserves general adoption, as obviating every inconvenience to which our author alludes, may be seen in the Berkshire Agricultural Report.

<sup>2</sup> The rack ought to be accessible on all sides, and perhaps high enough for small cattle to escape under it from their more powerful

adversaries. Protection from the cold and a sunny exposure tend very much to the improvement of animals.

<sup>3</sup> The housing of milch cows, both in summer and winter, has been much recommended, both as saving manure, and making the provender go farther. Except, however, for such as are intended to be fattened for the butcher; other cattle will probably thrive better, if left at their liberty; and in any case young cattle should daily be let loose, for exercise at least.

## December's Husbandry.

Champion.

6. For charges so little, much quiet is won,  
If strongly and handsomely all things be done ;  
But use to untackle them once in a day,  
To rub and to lick them, to drink and to play.

Ordering of  
cattle.

7. Get Trusty to tend them, not lubberly 'squire,  
That all the day long hath his nose at the fire :  
Nor trust unto children, poor cattle to feed <sup>1</sup>,  
But such as be able to help, at a need.
8. Serve rye-straw out first, then wheat-straw and pease <sup>2</sup>,  
Then oat-straw and barley, then hay if ye please :  
But serve them with hay, while the straw stover last,  
Then love they no straw, they had rather to fast !

Forks and  
yokes.

9. Yokes, forks, and such other, let bailiff spy out <sup>3</sup>,  
And gather the same, as he walketh about ;  
And after, at leisure, let this be his hire,  
To beath them and trim them, at home by the fier.

<sup>1</sup> Strength as well as diligence, attention and skill are requisite in tending cattle and sheep, especially when feeding on turneps, and at a distance from home. Children are certainly ill-adapted for this employment.

<sup>2</sup> It is unquestionably sound advice, to begin with the least inviting food, and to proceed by degrees to what is more tempting, as the best

means to promote the thriving of animals.

<sup>3</sup> The modern farmer usually purchases his implements prepared to his hands ; and his bailiff would be ill employed, sitting by the fire, bending sticks for yokes and forks. Yokes, indeed, ought to be wholly exploded : oxen draw much better, and with more ease in collars.

10. As well at the full of the moon, as the change <sup>1</sup>,  
 Sea rages, in winter, be suddenly strange :  
 Then look to thy marshes, if doubt be to fray,  
 For fear of (*ne fortè*) have cattle away. Going of cat-  
tle in marshes.
  
11. Both salt fish and ling fish (if any ye have) <sup>2</sup>,  
 Through shifting and drying, from rotting go save ;  
 Lest winter with moistness do make it relent,  
 And put it in hazard, before it be spent. I look to thy  
ling and salt-  
fish.
  
12. Broom faggot is best to dry haberden on,  
 Lay board upon ladder, if faggots be gone :  
 For breaking (in turning) have very good eye,  
 And blame not the wind, so the weather be dry. How to use  
ling and ha-  
berden.
  
13. Good fruit and good plenty doth well in the loft,  
 Then make thee an orchard, and cherish it oft <sup>3</sup> ;  
 For plant or for stock, lay aforehand to cast,  
 But set, or remove it, ere Christmas be past. Removing of  
trees.

---

<sup>1</sup> On the flat and stormy sea-coast where our author lived, this caution is highly proper. The spring tides in March and September are always high ; but the state and direction of the wind, it is well known, have a powerful influence on the tides, about the change and the full of the moon more especially. The third day is commonly the highest tide.

<sup>2</sup> It has already been observed, that fish, which swarm on our coasts, and would employ many hands in catching them, if they had greater encouragement, are now chiefly

used when fresh, and considered as luxuries ; though, as a frequent viand in a salted state, they would be equally conducive to health and æconomy. Occasional abstinence from flesh meat, if not a religious duty, would at least be a patriotic one.

<sup>3</sup> Planting orchards in open weather, before Christmas, is certainly to be recommended ; because the plants being in a torpid state, are less sensible of removal. The distance ordered between tree and tree is not too great ; but during the first twelve years of their growth,

## December's Husbandry.

An orchard  
point.

14. Set one fro another, full forty feet wide ;  
To stand as he stood, is a part of his pride.  
More faier (c), more worthy of cost to remove,  
More steady ye set it, more likely to prove.

Orchard and  
hop-yard.

15. To teach and unteach, in a school is unmeet ;  
To do and undo, to the purse is unsweet :  
Then orchard or hop-yard, so trimmed with cost,  
Should not, through folly, be spoiled and lost.

Letting horse  
blood.

16. Ere Christmas be passed, let horse be let blood <sup>1</sup>,  
For many a purpose, it doth them much good.  
The day of St. Stephen, old fathers did use ;  
If that do mislike thee, some other day use.

Breeding of  
the bots.

17. Look well to thy horses in stable thou must,  
That hay be not foisty, nor chaff full of dust ;  
Nor stone in their provender, feather, nor clots,  
Nor fed with green peason, for breeding of bots <sup>2</sup>.

---

VARIATION.

(c) fair.

the ground may be advantageously cultivated between them, or cherry-trees may range alternately with them in that space. When the fruit-trees are of any considerable size before they are planted, their original exposure should be attended to, especially if removed to colder situations. Orchards and hop-grounds, however, require constant attention: failures are to be supplied, straggling branches to be pruned away, the ground is to be dug round the roots, and sometimes

fresh soil added ; and, lastly, if any part of the fruit should be found indifferent, a better sort is to be substituted in its stead.

<sup>1</sup> It is still the common practice to bleed and physic horses, after they are taken from grass. We live, however, too long after the period when popery was the established religion, to have any faith in the superior efficacy of saints' days, for performing operations of any kind.

<sup>2</sup> Pease-haulm, on which horses feed greedily, is apt to gripe them

18. Some horsekeeper lasheth out provender so<sup>1</sup>,  
Some Gillian spend-all, so often doth go,  
For hogs-meat and hens-meat, for that and for this,  
That corn-loft is emptied, ere chapman hath his.
19. Some countries are pinched of meadow for hay<sup>2</sup>,  
Yet ease it with fitches, as well as they may;  
Which inned and threshed, and husbandly dight,  
Keeps labouring cattle, in very good plight.
20. In threshing out fitches, one point I will shew,  
First thresh out for seed of the fitches a few:  
Thresh few fro thy plough-horse, thresh clean for the  
cow;  
This order in Norfolk good husbands allow.
21. If frost do continue, take this for a law (a)<sup>3</sup>,  
The strawberries look to be covered with straw;

¶  
Strawberries.

## VARIATION.

(a) This quatrain is wanting.

The best remedy is said to be scalded bran. Bots, a kind of worms, often annoy horses, especially such as have succulent food.

<sup>1</sup> Horses ought neither to be overfed, nor too much stinted. Idle servants frequently cram them at their masters' expence, from a mistaken opinion, that food will supply the place of good dressing. Economy in the stable is absolutely necessary, or the profits of the farm will be absorbed in the wasteful feeding of animals.

<sup>2</sup> Before the general introduction of artificial grasses, it would

have been impossible to maintain half our present stock; yet we find that fitches, or vetches, which are of different sorts, were early introduced here, and used both green and dry, though now chiefly in the former state. "The order in Norfolk," &c. is obviously right. For horses, all the seeds left in vetches may be considered as hard food: for ruminating animals, it is questionable how far grain and hard seeds may be beneficial.

<sup>3</sup> From a variety of remarks in this work, as well as in other books published about the same period, it



## December's Husbandry.

Laid overly trim upon crotches and bows,  
And after uncovered, as weather allows.

- Gilliflowers. 22. The gilliflower also, the skilfull do know,  
Doth (*b*) look to be covered in frost and in snow :  
The knot and the border, and rosemary gay,  
Do crave the like succour, for dying away.

- ¶ How to pre-serve bees. 23. Go look to thy bees, if the hive be too light <sup>1</sup>,  
Set water and honey, with rosemary dight ;  
Which set in a dish full of sticks in the hive,  
From danger of famine ye save them alive.

24. In meadow or pasture (to grow the more fine) (*a*),  
Let campers be camping in any of thine <sup>2</sup> ;

---

VARIATIONS.

(*b*) do.

(*a*) Not in this edition.

---

is evident that horticulture began to be an object of attention in England in the Elizabethan age ; nor was the flower-garden neglected, though the knots and parterres were too artificial to display, the beauties of vegetable nature to advantage.

<sup>1</sup> Bees lie torpid during the cold weather, and if roused to life and activity at that season, they can scarcely be supported by any mode of feeding that will repay it. When nature calls them to repose, it is best to screen them from the influence of the sun, till there is a supply of their

proper food. To cottagers, however, the profits of bees are not inconsiderable.

<sup>2</sup> Camping, or playing at foot-ball is no doubt useful on green sward, to settle the roots of plants, and to destroy moss. In Norfolk, they are still attached to this pastime, which gives activity to the limbs, and vigour to the whole frame. In a publication by M. Stevenson, which appeared in 1673, under the title of " Norfolk Drollery," &c. we find a poem in reference to camping.

Which if ye do suffer, when low is the spring;  
You gain to yourself a commodious thing.

*Thus endeth December's Husbandry.*

## ¶ A DIGRESSION TO HOSPITALITY.

### CHAP. XXIII.

LEAVE husbandry sleeping awhile ye must do (a) <sup>1</sup>,  
To learn of housekeeping a lesson or two :  
Whatever is sent thee, by travel and pain,  
A time there is lent thee, to render't again.  
Although ye defend it, unspent for to be,  
Another shall spend it,—no thank unto thee.  
However we climb to accomplish the mind,  
We have but a time, thereof profit to find.

#### VARIATION.

(a) This twenty-third chapter wanting.

<sup>x</sup> The cultivated and liberal mind of Tusser seems to have been ill-suited to his fortune and to his vocation, which, though always respectable, was not commonly followed by persons of education and condition, as it is at the present

time. A love of hospitality probably kept him from independence; yet if he was imprudent, we cannot help loving the man, and admiring the justness of his sentiments on every subject connected with life and morals.

## December's Husbandry.

I A DESCRIPTION OF TIME (*a*) AND  
THE YEAR <sup>1</sup>.

## CHAP. XXIV.

Of God to thy doings, a time there is sent,  
Which endeth with time that in doing is spent :  
For time is itself, but a time for a time,  
Forgotten full soon, as the tune of a chime.

|            |                                                                |
|------------|----------------------------------------------------------------|
| Spring.    | In Spring-time we rear, we do ( <i>c</i> ) sow, and we plant ; |
| Summer.    | In Summer get victuals, lest after we want.                    |
| Harvest.   | In Harvest, we carry in corn, and the fruit,                   |
| Winter.    | In Winter to spend, as we need of each suit.                   |
| Childhood. | The year I compare, as I find for a truth,                     |
| Youth.     | The Spring unto Childhood, the Summer to Youth.                |
| Manhood.   | The Harvest to Manhood, the Winter to Age,                     |
| Age.       | All quickly forgot, as a play on a stage.                      |

Time past is forgotten, ere men be aware :  
Time present is thought on, with wonderful care :  
Time coming is feared, and therefore we save  
Yet oft ere it come, we be gone to the grave.

## VARIATIONS.

(*a*) times.(*c*) we sow.

---

<sup>1</sup> The moral reflections in this chapter appeal to the heart and to the understanding ; and therefore need no comment. The same may be said of the following on " Life and Riches." The moral maxims of Tusser are not inferior to his Agricultural Precepts.

† A DESCRIPTION OF LIFE AND  
RICHES<sup>1</sup>.

CHAP. XXV.

Who living, but daily discern it he may,  
How life as a shadow, doth vanish away,  
And nothing to count on, so suer (c) to trust,  
As suer of death, and to turn into (c) dust.

The lands and the riches that here we possess,  
Be none of our own, if a God we profess ;  
But lent us of him, as his talent of gold,  
Which being demanded, who can it withhold ?

God maketh no writing, that justly doth say,  
How long we shall have it—a year or a day :  
But leave it we must (howsoever we leeve (a)  
When Atrop shall pluck us, from hence by the sleeve.

Atrop, or  
Death.

To Death we must stoop, be we high, be we low,  
But how, and how suddenly, few be that know ;  
What carry we then but a sheet to the grave,  
To cover this carcass, of all that we have ?

VARIATIONS.

(c) sure.

(c) wants *into*.

(a) like.

---

<sup>1</sup> This estimate of life is perfectly just ; and the value of riches is properly reduced to the standard of

their permanency, which, at the utmost, cannot exceed the duration of human existence.

What carry we then but a sheet to the grave,  
To cover, this carcass of all that we have ?

# ¶ A DESCRIPTION OF HOUSE-KEEPING<sup>1</sup>.

## CHAP. XXVI.

WHAT then of this talent, while here we remain,  
But study to yield it to God with a gain?  
And that shall we do, if we do it not hid (a),  
But use and bestow it as Christ doth us bid (a).

What good to get riches, by breaking of sleep,  
But (having the same) a good house for to keep?  
Not only to bring a good fame to thy door,  
But also the prayer to win of the poor.

### VARIATIONS.

(a) hyd.

(a) byd.

<sup>1</sup> Hospitality seems to have been a prominent feature in the character of Tusser; and to that cause, as well as to an unsteady disposition, may probably be ascribed the poverty in which he lived and died. When he tells us that,

“Of all other doings house-keeping  
is chief,  
For daily it helpeth the poor with  
relief,”

however much we may admire his

generosity, we question his prudence. But the fact is, in former times hospitality was practised at a cheaper rate than in the present times. As luxury has encreased the variety and expence of the bill of fare, social entertainments have declined, or at least have become unfrequent from necessity. The friendly repast has given way to the expensive feast, and the intercourse of neighbours is therefore rare and formal.

Of all other doings, house-keeping is chief,  
For daily it helpeth the poor with relief:—  
The neighbour, the stranger, and all that have need,  
Which causeth thy doings the better to speed.

Though hearken to this, we should ever among,  
Yet chiefly at Christmas, of all the year long :  
Good cause of that use may appear by the name,  
Though niggardly niggards do kick at the same.

---

## ¶ A DESCRIPTION OF THE FEAST OF THE BIRTH OF CHRIST,

(COMMONLY CALLED CHRISTMAS <sup>1</sup>.)

---

### CHAP. XXVII.

OF Christ cometh Christmas, the name with the feast,  
A time full of joy, to the greatest and least ;  
At Christmas was Christ, our Saviour, born,—  
The world through sin altogether forlorn.

---

<sup>1</sup> In days of yore the festivities at Christmas were universally felt and enjoyed by all ranks. Whether from a principle of religion, or from habit and custom, the rich liberally treated the poor; and thus a season in itself naturally gloomy and desolate, passed in the interchange of social visits and hospitable entertainments. Even in modern times,

many visit each other at Christmas, who have little intercourse during the rest of the year. In the more remote parts of the kingdom, more especially, the genius of hospitality has not yet deserted the yule fire-side, nor has the joyous solemnity ceased to warm the bosom of charity.



## December's Husbandry.

At Christmas the days do begin to take length,  
Of Christ doth religion, chiefly, take strength :  
As Christmas is only a figure or trope,  
So only in (c) Christ is the strength of our hope.

At Christmas we banquet, the rich with the poor,  
Who then, but the miser, but openeth his door ?  
At Christmas, of Christ many carols we sing,  
And give many gifts, in the joy of that king.

At Christmas, in Christ we rejoice, and be glad,  
As onely of whom <sup>1</sup> our comfort is had :  
At Christmas we joy altogether with mirth,  
For his sake, that joyed us all with his birth.

---

### VARIATION.

(c) is Christ the strength, &c.

---

<sup>1</sup> "As onely of whom, our comfort is had." A syllable seems to be wanting here, or perhaps *onely* may be pronounced as a trisyllable, or *whom* as a dissyllable, according to the broad vulgar accent.

---

¶ A DESCRIPTION OF APT TIME TO  
SPEND<sup>1</sup>.

---

CHAP. XXVIII.

LET such (so fantastical) liking not this,  
Nor any thing honest, that ancient is,  
Give place to the time that so meet we do see,  
Appointed of God, as it seemeth to be.

At Christmas, good husbands<sup>2</sup> have corn on the  
ground,  
In barn and in sollar, worth many a pound :  
With plenty of other things, cattle and sheep,  
All sent them (no doubt on) good houses to keep.

At Christmas, the hardness of winter doth rage,  
A griper of all things, and specially age :  
Then lightly<sup>3</sup> poor people, the young with the old,  
Be sorest oppressed with hunger and cold.

---

<sup>1</sup> That season of the year when the labours of agriculture are suspended by the weather, or when their revolution is completed, is doubtless most suitable to be spent in self-enjoyment, and in distributing to the poor; and about Christmas-tide, various circumstances concur to invite to the exercise of both.

<sup>2</sup> " Good husbands," a contraction for good husbandmen.

<sup>3</sup> " Then lightly," an old form of expression. The author means, that poor people of course are sorely oppressed.

" Short summer *lightly* has a forward spring."

SHAKESPEARE.

## December's Husbandry.

At Christmas, by labour is little to get,  
That wanting,—the poorest in danger are set :  
What season then better, of all the whole year,  
Thy needy, poor neighbour to comfort and cheer.

---

### ¶ AGAINST FANTASTICAL SCRUPLE- NESS<sup>1</sup>.

---

#### CHAP. XXIX.

At this time (*a*) and that time (*a*), some make a great  
matter ;

Some help not, but hinder the poor with their clatter.  
Take custom from feasting, what cometh then last ?  
Where one hath a dinner, a hundred shall fast.

To dog in the manger, some liken I could,  
That hay will eat none, nor let other that would.  
Some scarce, in a year, give a dinner or two,  
Nor well can abide any other to do.

---

#### VARIATION.

(*a*) thing.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tusser, if we may use the expression, gives us line upon line, and precept upon precept, in order to enforce the practice of hospitality. "Mirth and good cheer," seems to have been his motto ; and it is evident that he understood human na-

ture well, when he preferred a merry fellow to a grave, designing villain.

"For oftentimes seen, no more  
very a knave,  
Than he that doth counterfeit most  
to be grave."

Play thou the good fellow ! seek none to misdeem  
 Disdain not the honest, though merry they seem ;  
 For oftentimes seen, no more very a knave.  
 Than he that doth counterfeit most to be grave.

## CHRISTMAS HUSBANDLY FARE<sup>1</sup>.

### CHAP. XXX.

Good husband and huswife, now chiefly be glad,  
 Things handsome to have, as they ought to be had.  
 They both do provide, against Christmas do come,  
 To welcome good neighbour, good cheer to have some.

Good bread and good drink, a good fire in the hall,  
 Brawn, pudding, and souse, and good mustard withall.

Christmas  
 country fare.

Beef, mutton, and pork, shred pies of the best,  
 Pig, veal, goose, and capon, and turkey well drest,  
 Cheese, apples, and nuts, joly carols to hear,  
 As then in the country, is counted good cheer.

<sup>1</sup> The "Christmas husbandly fare," is interesting as a genuine picture of the mode of living in the sixteenth century. The different viands enumerated are still known by the names which they bear in the text,

if we except "shred pies," which appear to be mince pies, as they are now called. Butcher's meat, poultry, native fruits, and home-brewed, were then thought amply sufficient.

## December's Husbandry.

What cost to good husband, is any of this ?  
 Good houshold provision only it is :  
 Of other the like, I do (c) leave out a many,  
 That costeth the husbandman never a penny.

---

# ¶ A CHRISTMAS CAROLL OF THE BIRTH OF CHRIST.

(UPON THE TUNE OF KING SALOMON<sup>1</sup>.)

---

## CHAP. XXXI.

1. WAS not Christ our Saviour,  
 Sent to us fro God above ?  
 Not for our good behaviour,  
 But only of his mercy and love.  
 If this be true, as true it is,  
 Truly in deed  
 Great thanks to God to yield for this,  
 Then had we need.
- 

### VARIATION.

(c) wants *do*.

---

<sup>1</sup> Christmas used to be celebrated by a number of rites and ceremonies, some of which still remain, while others are become obsolete.

Carols, from the Italian *Carola*, are songs of joy and exultation, as well as of devotion; and both are united in those which commemorate the appearance of Christ on earth.

It appears from Warton's History of English Poetry, that a Ballad, called King Salomon, was printed in 1559, the tune of which was probably popular, as our author adapted to it the words of his Christmas Carol. Tusser himself was no mean proficient in music.

2. This did our God, for very troth,  
 To train to him the soul of man,  
 And justly to perform his oath,  
 To Sarah and to Abram than  
 That through his seed all nations should  
 Most blessed be :  
 As in due time, perform (a) he would,  
 As now we see.

3. Which wondrously is brought to pass,  
 And in our sight already done,  
 By sending, as his promise was,  
 (To comfort us) his only Son,  
 Even Christ, I mean, that virgin's child,  
 In Bethlem born,  
 That lamb of God, that prophet mild,  
 With crowned thorn.

4. Such was his love to save us all,  
 From dangers of the curse of God,  
 That we stood in by Adam's fall,  
 And by our own deserved rod,  
 That through his blood and holy name  
 Who so believes<sup>1</sup>,  
 And fly from sin, and abhors the same,  
 Free mercy he gives.

—  
 VARIATION.

(a) perform'd.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Who so believes," &c. There is some confusion and false grammar in this passage. The obvious meaning is, "to such as fly from sin, and abhor the same, he gives free mercy." Some of the later editions have *abhor*, which appears to be the most proper reading, though it is not in either of the standard impressions.



## December's Husbandry.

5. For these glad news this feast doth bring,  
 To God the Son and Holy Ghost,  
 Let man give thanks, rejoice and sing,  
 From world to world, from coast to coast,  
 For all good gifts so many ways,  
 That God doth send,  
 Let us in Christ give God the praise,  
 Till (a) life shall end.

T. TUSSER.

At Christmas be merry, and thankful withall,  
 And feast thy poor neighbours, the great with the small ;  
 Yea all the year long, to the poor let us give,  
 God's blessing to follow us, whiles we do live.

---

VARIATION.

(a) While.

---

# JANUARY'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XXXII.

1. BID Christmas adieu,  
Thy stock now (*a*) renew.
2. Who killeth a neat,  
Hath cheaper his meat.  
Fat home-fed souse,  
Is good in a house.
3. Who dainties love,  
A beggar shall prove ;  
Who always sells,  
In hunger dwells.
4. Who nothing save,  
Shall nothing have.
5. Lay dirt upon heaps,  
Some profit it reaps.  
When weather is hard,  
Get muck out of yard.

## VARIATION.

(*a*) Wants *now*.

## January's Abstract.

- A fallow bestow,  
 Where pease shall grow :  
 Good peason and white,  
 A fallow will 'quite.
6. Go gather quickset,  
 The youngest to (a) get.  
 Dig garden, stroy mallow,  
 Set willow and sallow.  
 Green willow for stake,  
 In bank will take.
7. Let doe go to buck,  
 Wish (b c) coney good luck.  
 Spare labour nor (c) money,  
 Store borough with coney.  
 Get warrener bound  
 To vermine thy ground.  
 Feed doves, but kill not,  
 If lose them ye will not.  
 Dove-house repair  
 Make dove-hole fair,  
 For hop-ground cold,  
 Dove-dung worth gold.
8. Good gardener mine  
 Make garden fine.  
 Set garden pease,  
 And beans if ye please.  
 Set respis and rose,  
 Young roots of those.

---

 VARIATIONS.

(a) go.

(b c) With.

(c) for.

9. The timely buyer  
Hath cheaper his fier.
10. Some burn without wit,  
Some fierless sit.
11. Now season is good,  
To lop or fell wood.  
Prune trees some allows,  
For cattle to brouse.
12. Give sheep to their fees  
The mistle of trees.
13. Let lop be shorn  
That hindreth corn.  
Some edder and stake,  
Strong hedge to make.
14. For sap as ye know,  
Let one bough grow.  
Next year ye may  
That bough cut away.
15. A lesson good  
T'encrease more wood.
16. Save crotches of wood,  
Save spars and stud.  
Save hop for his dole  
The strong long pole.
17. However ye scotch,  
Save pole and crotch.
18. From Christmas to May,  
Weak cattle decay.
19. With verjuice acquaint,  
Poor bullock so faint ;  
This med'cine approved,  
Is for to be loved.

## January's Abstract.

20. Let plaster lie,  
Three days to try :  
Too long if ye stay,  
Tail rots away.
21. Ewes ready to yeane  
Crave ground rid clean.  
Keep sheep out of briers,  
Keep beast out of miërs.
22. Keep bushes from bill,  
Till hedge ye will :  
Best had for thy turn,  
Their roots go and burn.
23. No bushes of mine,  
If fence be thine.
24. In stubbed plot,  
Till hole will clot.
25. Rid grass of bones,  
Of sticks and stones.
26. Warm barth give lambs,  
Good food to their dams.  
Look daily well to them,  
Lest dogs undo them.
27. Young lamb well sold,  
Fat lamb worth gold.
28. Keep twins for breed,  
As ewes have need.
29. One calf, if it please ye  
Now reared shall ease ye.  
Calves likely rear  
At rising of year.  
Calf large and lean,  
Is best to wean.

30. Calf lick'd, take away,  
And house it ye may.  
This point I allow  
For servant and cow.
31. Calves younger than other,  
Learn (c) one of another.
32. No danger at all,  
To geld as they fall.  
Yet Michel cries,  
Please butchers' eyes.
33. Sow, ready to fare  
Craves huswife's care.
34. Leave sow but five,  
The better to thrive.
35. Wean such for store,  
As suck before.  
Wean only but three,  
Large breeders to be.
36. Lamb, bulchin, and pig,  
Geld under the big.
37. Learn wit, Sir Dolt,  
In gelding of colt.
38. Geld young thy filly  
Else perish will Jilly.  
Let gelding alone,  
So large of bone.  
By breathly tits,  
Few profit hits.

---

## VARIATION.

(c) Learns. This anomaly in syntax is not uncommon in Tusser.



## January's Abstract.

39. Breed ever the best,  
And do off (*b*) the rest.  
Of long and large,  
Take huswife a charge.
40. Good cow and good ground,  
Yield yearly a pound.  
Good faring sow,  
Holds profit with cow.
41. Who keeps but twain,  
The more may gain.
42. Tithe justly, good garçon,  
Else drive will the parson.
43. Thy garden twi-fallow,  
Stroy hemlock and mallow.
44. Like practice they prove  
That hops do love.
45. Now make and wand in  
Trim bower to stand in,  
Leave wadling about,  
Till arbour be out.
46. Who now sows oats  
Gets gold and groats.  
Who sows in May,  
Gets little that way.
47. Go break up land,  
Get mattock in hand :  
Stub root so tough,  
For breaking of plough.

---

VARIATION.

(*b*) of.

## January's Abstract.

48. What greater crime,  
Than loss of time ?
49. Lay land for (b) leaze,  
Break up if ye please ;  
But fallow not yet,  
That hath any wit.
50. Where drink ye sow,  
Good tilth bestow.
51. Small profit is found,  
By peeling of ground.
52. Land past the best,  
Cast up for rest.

*Thus endeth January's Abstract, agreeing with January's  
Husbandry.*

### ¶ OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Get pulling-hook, sirs,  
For broom and firs.  
Pluck broom, broom still,  
Cut broom, broom kill.

Broom pluckt by and by,  
Break up for rye,  
Friend, ringle thy hog,  
Or look for a dog.

---

### VARIATION.

(b) or.

## January's Abstract.

In casting provide,  
For seed lay aside,  
Get dung, friend mine,  
For stock and vine.

If earth be not soft,  
Go dig it aloft.  
For quagmire get boots,  
Stub alders and roots.

Hop-poles wax scant,  
For poles mo plant.  
Set chesnut and walnut,  
Set filbert and small nut.

Peach, plum-tree, and cherry,  
Young bay and his berry ;  
Or set their stone,  
Unset leave out none.

Sow kernels to bear,  
Of apple and pear.  
All trees that bear gum,  
Now set as they come.

Now set, or remove,  
Such stocks as ye love.

*Here ends January's short Remembrances.*

## OF TREES OR FRUITS TO BE SET OR REMOVED.

- |                              |                                   |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. Apple-trees of all sorts. | 17. Pears of all sorts.           |
| 2. Apricocks.                | 18. Pear plums, black and yellow. |
| 3. Barberries.               | 19. Quince-trees.                 |
| 4. Bullace, black and white. | 20. Respis, or rasberries.        |
| 5. Cherries, red and black.  | 21. Raisins.                      |
| 6. Chesnuts.                 | 22. Strawberries, red and white.  |
| 7. Cornet plums.             | 23. Service trees.                |
| 8. Damsons, white and black. | 24. Small nuts.                   |
| 9. Filberts, red and white.  | 25. Walnuts.                      |
| 10. Gooseberries.            | 26. Wardens, white and red.       |
| 11. Grapes, white and red.   | 27. Wheat plums.                  |
| 12. Green or grass plums.    |                                   |
| 13. Hurtle-berries.          | Now set ye may,                   |
| 14. Medlars, or marles.      | The box and bay,                  |
| 15. Mulberry.                | Hawthorn and prim,                |
| 16. Peaches, white and red.  | For clothes trim.                 |

### VARIATION.

18. The more early editions have *pearar plums*; a variety either lost, or unknown.

# ¶ JANUARY'S HUSBANDRY.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

A kindly good January,  
Freezeth pot by the fire.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

Husbandly  
lessons.

1. WHEN Christmas is ended, bid feasting adieu,  
Go play the good husband, thy stock to renew,  
Be mindful of rearing, in hope of a gain<sup>1</sup>,  
Dame profit shall give thee reward for thy pain.
2. Who both by his calf and his lamb will be known,  
May well kill a neat and a sheep of his own;  
And he that can rear up a pig in his house<sup>2</sup>,  
Hath cheaper his bacon, and sweeter his souse.
3. Who eateth his veal, pig, and lamb, being froth,  
Shall, twice in a week, go to bed without broth<sup>3</sup>:  
Unskilfull that pass not, but sell away, sell,  
Shall never have plenty wherever they dwell.

<sup>1</sup> The rearing of stock can only be recommended as a general principle. In some situations, buying in store sheep and cattle is more profitable than breeding; while fattening calves and lambs for the market is most advantageous in others.

<sup>2</sup> That it is cheaper for a farmer to breed than to buy pigs, admits of no doubt, provided he has the means, conveniently. The poor, however,

and those who have every thing to buy, will gain little by pigs, except their dung. As for other kinds of animals, such persons will generally be losers.

<sup>3</sup> Broth was formerly the supper-dish in farm houses; and is still partially used, instead of meat. Killing or selling, before animals are in proper condition, is certainly not the road to plenty.

4. Be greedy in spending, and careless to save <sup>1</sup>,  
And shortly be needy, and ready to crave,  
Be wilfull to kill, and unskilfull to store,  
And look for no foizon, I tell thee before.
5. Lay dirt up on heaps, fair yard to be seen <sup>2</sup>,  
If frost will abide it, to field with it clean.  
In winter a fallow, some love to bestow,  
Where pease for the pot, they intend for to sow.
6. In making or mending, as needeth thy ditch <sup>3</sup>,  
Get set to quickset it, learn cunningly which.  
In hedging, where clay is, get stake as ye know,  
Of poplar and willow, for fuel to grow. Quickset now.
7. Leave killing of coney, let doe go to buck <sup>4</sup>,  
And vermine thy borough, for fear of ill-luck.  
Feed dove (no more killing) old dove-house repair,  
Save dove-dung for hop-yard, when house ye make Keep clean thy dove-house.  
fair.

<sup>1</sup> He who is eager to spend and careless to save, must of necessity soon become a beggar.

<sup>2</sup> Neatness in the farm-yard is equally creditable and useful; and to carry out dung in frost, so that the carts may not cut the roads or the grass, is a practice founded in reason and experience. Pease for boiling were much more used when meagre days were enjoined, than since the Reformation. The more the earth is stirred and manured, they will grow the better, and come the earlier.

<sup>3</sup> Hedging and ditching, when the weather will permit, properly fill up the early weeks of the year. Poplar and willow are well known to thrive best in an argillaceous soil: in gravel they soon die away.

<sup>4</sup> About Candlemas, the killing of rabbits ought to be discontinued; and indeed after Christmas their flesh is little esteemed. The value of pigeon-dung is now perfectly understood; but the dove-cot is far from being profitable, if we estimate the quantity of grain which pigeons devour.

## January's Husbandry.

8. Dig garden, stroy mallow, now may ye at ease,  
And set, as a dainty, thy runcival pease <sup>1</sup>,  
Go cut, and set roses, chuse aptly thy (*c*) plot,  
The roots of the youngest are best to be got.

Timely provi-  
sion for fuel.

9. In time go and bargain, lest worser to fall <sup>2</sup>,  
For fuel for making, for carriage and all ;  
Go buy at the stub, is the best for the buyer,  
More timely provision, the cheaper the fièr.

- Ill husbandry. 10. Some burneth a load at a time in his hall,  
Some never leave burning, till burnt they have all.  
Such (*b c*) making of haveck, without any wit,  
Make many poor souls, without fièr to sit.

Pruning of  
trees.

11. If frost do continue, this lesson doth well <sup>3</sup>,  
For comfort of cattle, the fuel to fell :  
From every tree the superfluous boughs,  
Now prune for thy neat, thereupon to go browse.

---

VARIATIONS.

(*c*) the.

(*b c*) Some.

<sup>1</sup> The labours of the gardener properly commence with the new year, in planting, pruning, and sowing. Modern times have made us acquainted with some varieties of pease which are preferable to runcivals for early ripening and productiveness.

<sup>2</sup> Before the general introduction of coal fires, wood was the principal, and almost the only fuel. To those, however, who have to buy it, the expence is greater than the mineral

produce of the pits. Economy is to be consulted in both. With good management, a comfortable fire may in most places of this island be kept for the sum of five pounds per annum, in many situations, much cheaper.

<sup>3</sup> Farmers of the present age having turnips and hay from artificial grasses to depend on, are seldom driven to the necessity of cutting browse for their cattle and sheep,—but deer, hares, and rabbits, prefer it almost to any thing.



- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                                       |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| <p>12. In pruning and trimming all manner of trees,<br/>Reserve to each cattle, their properly fees.<br/>If snow do continue, sheep hardly that fare,<br/>Crave mistle and ivy, for them for to spare <sup>1</sup>.</p>         | <p>Mistleand Ivy.</p>                 |
| <p>13. Now lop for thy fuel, old pollenger grown <sup>2</sup>,<br/>That hinder the corn, or the grass to be mown,<br/>In lopping and felling, save edder and stake,<br/>Thine hedges, as needeth, to mend or to make.</p>       | <p>Lopping of<br/>pollengers.</p>     |
| <p>14. In lopping old Iocham, for fear of mishap,<br/>One bough stay unlopped, to cherish the sap <sup>3</sup>.<br/>The second year after then boldly ye may,<br/>For dripping his fellows, that bough cut away.</p>            |                                       |
| <p>15. Lop poplar and sallow, elm, maple, and prie <sup>4</sup>,<br/>Well saved from cattle, till summer to lie;<br/>So far as in lopping, their tops ye do fling,<br/>So far, without planting, young coppice will spring.</p> | <p>The property<br/>of soft wood.</p> |

<sup>1</sup> Mistle or misletoe and ivy are but indifferent fare for sheep; nor are they required under the modern system of agriculture. Sheep, however, are known to be fond of ivy.

<sup>2</sup> Trees in small enclosures are very injurious to corn; yet who that admires rural beauty, would wish to see the hedge-rows injured? Edder is such slender branches as may be interweaved with the stronger. It is also used to fasten down thatch at the eaves and on the ridges of buildings, and is likewise

employed on the top of some fences.

<sup>3</sup> Though there appears to be some reason in our author's recommending a bough to be left, as a vehicle for the sap, it can only be necessary in young trees. Old pollards do not require this caution.

<sup>4</sup> This practice is at variance with the modern mode of managing woodlands. After the lop is in a state fit to be removed, the copses ought to be fenced from cattle, and blank spaces to be filled with acorns, or other kinds of forest trees.

## January's Husbandry.

16. Such fuel, as standing, a late ye have bought <sup>1</sup>,  
Now fell it and make it, and do as ye ought:  
Give charge to the hewers (that many things mars)  
To hew out for crotches, for poles and for spars.

Hop-poles and  
crotches.

17. If hop-yard or orchard, ye mean for to have,  
For hop-poles and crotches, in lopping go save <sup>2</sup>;  
Which husbandly spared, may serve at a push,  
And stop, by so having, two gaps with a bush.

18. From Christmas, till May be well entered in,  
Some cattle wax faint, and look poorly and thin <sup>3</sup>;  
And chiefly when prime grass at first doth appear,  
Then most is the danger of all the whole year.

A medicine  
for faint cattle.

19. 'Take verjuice and heat it, a pint for a cow <sup>4</sup>,  
Bay salt, a handfull, to rub tongue ye wot how:

<sup>1</sup> The cutters of underwood are still to be cautioned against waste; and when it is sold standing, due reserves ought to be made of young timber, at suitable distances; which may again be thinned at each subsequent fall; and fresh saplings left to supply their places. With proper management, coppices might be rendered of double their usual value. A good system has lately been adopted in the Duke of Marlborough's woods in Oxfordshire, of leaving a large number of promising stocks for the purpose just mentioned, which not only encreases the beauty of the woodland scene, but proves a nursery for future timber. This circumstance would not have

been so particularly mentioned, had not the prevailing practice in regard to woodlands been erroneous. A nobleman or gentleman who has extensive underwoods, should employ his own people to cut, and then sell.

<sup>2</sup> To apply every stick to its proper purpose, and to cut with an eye to its suitable application, is very judicious advice.

<sup>3</sup> When early or prime grass, which is only to be found in small quantities, makes cattle to loath their former dry food, they cannot be expected to thrive, till they have an abundant supply.

<sup>4</sup> Verjuice, or the juice of the crab, has already been recommended

That done, with the salt, let her drink off the rest ;  
This many times raiseth the feeble up beast.

20. Poor bullock with browsing, and naughtily fed,  
Scarce feedeth, her teeth be so loose in her head.  
Then slice ye the tail, where ye feel it so soft<sup>1</sup>,  
With soot and with garlick, bound to it aloft.

To fasten  
loose teeth in  
a bullock.

21. By brambles and bushes, in pasture too full<sup>2</sup>,  
Poor sheep be in danger, and loseth their wool :  
Now therefore thy ewe, upon lambing so near,  
Desireth in pasture, that all may be clear.

Ewes up on  
yeaning.

22. Leave grubbing or pulling of bushes, my son,  
Till timely thy fences require to be done<sup>3</sup>.  
Then take of the best, for to furnish thy turn,  
And home with the rest, for the fier to burn.

23. In every green, if the fence be not thine<sup>4</sup>,  
Now stub up the bushes, the grass to be fine,  
Lest neighbour do daily so hack them, belive,  
That neither thy bushes, nor pasture can thrive.

Stubbing of  
greens.

for its excellent but too much neglected qualities.

<sup>1</sup> To the cow-leeht, he propriety of these prescriptions must be left. Bullocks are seldom so ill attended to, as to injure their teeth with browsing.

<sup>2</sup> Briers or brambles ought never to be suffered to spread near sheep commons, both for the sake of the wool and the animal.

<sup>3</sup> To leave a sufficiency of bushes,

in order to fill up gaps in hedges, as occasion may require, is obviously right.

<sup>4</sup> It would be a beneficial practice if hedges were constantly kept trimmed and clipped, at the height of four feet. Not only would the fences be more durable, but grass or corn would thrive better in their vicinity. A careless or slovenly farmer tempts his neighbour to trespass, *belive*, or in the night.

## January's Husbandry.

24. In ridding of pasture, with turfs that lie by <sup>1</sup>,  
 Fill every hole up as close as a die :  
 The labour is little, the profit is gay,  
 Whatever the loitering labourers say.
25. The sticks and the stones go gather up clean <sup>2</sup>,  
 For hurting of scythe, or for harming of green.  
 For fear of Hugh Prowler, get home with the rest,  
 When frost is at hardest, then carriage is best.

- Young lambs. 26. Young broom, or good pasture thy ewes do require,  
 Warm barth, and in safety, their lambs do desire <sup>3</sup> :  
 Look often well to them, for foxes and dogs,  
 For pits, and for brambles, for vermin, and hogs.
27. More dainty the lamb, the (c) more worth to be sold <sup>4</sup>,  
 The sooner the better, for ewe that is old ;

---

 VARIATION.

(c) wants *the*.

---

<sup>1</sup> To make pastures smooth, and to cover with turf, or to sow seeds where the grass is destroyed, is a cheap but valuable improvement. Ant-hills should have the turf removed, part of the mould scattered thinly about, and then the covering replaced, a little lower than the surrounding surface, in order that the rain may stand and destroy the remaining insects.

<sup>2</sup> No good farmer, it must be admitted, will leave sticks or large stones on his grass lands. Hugh Prowler is a cant term of our author, for any petty marauder, who seizes

on all fire-wood that comes within his reach. It is almost needless to remind any intelligent farmer, that a hard frost is the best time for the carriage of heavy commodities.

<sup>3</sup> A barth is a small sheltered enclosure near the farm-house, where the ewes about yeaning time, are brought for safety, and more easy superintendence. Great care is necessary at that season, especially if the weather be severe. Artificial shelters are now in frequent use.

<sup>4</sup> The finest, or more dainty lambs, though in most request for the butcher, ought to be saved for

But if ye do mind, to have milk of the dame,  
Till May, do not sever the lamb fro the same.

28. Ewes, yearly by twinning, rich masters do make,  
The lamb of such twinnings, for breeders go take <sup>1</sup> :  
For twinlings be twiggers, increase for to bring,  
Though some for their twigging, *peccavi* (*b*) may sing.  
Rearing of lambs.
29. Calves likely that come, between Christmas and Lent,  
Take huswife to rear, or else after repent <sup>2</sup>.  
Of such as do fall, between change and the prime,  
No rearing, but sell, or go kill them in time.  
Rearing of calves.
30. House calf, and go suckle it twice in a-day <sup>3</sup>,  
And after a while, set it water and hay :  
Stake ragged to rub on,—no such as will bend,  
Then wean it, well tended, at fifty days' end.  
Housing of cattle.

## VARIATION.

(*b*) *peccantem*.

stock. As for ewe's milk, it is seldom regarded by the modern farmer, farther than may be necessary for the young.

<sup>1</sup> Twin lambs, though I know not on what ground, are supposed to perpetuate their prolific quality, and are therefore kept for breeders. But they should be kept from the ram rather later than usual, that they may not wean before there is a due supply of food.

<sup>2</sup> Early calves unquestionably

make the strongest stock, if well attended to ; but why they should be killed if brought forth between the prime and the change of the moon \*, must be referred to a belief in the influence of the planets, which is now chiefly confined to the admirers of Moore's Almanack.

<sup>3</sup> Calves are seldom weaned so early as at the end of fifty days. Indeed, they ought to be allowed to suck longer, whether intended for the butcher or for stock.

\* That is, three days after the new moon or change.

## January's Husbandry.

31. The senior weaned, his younger shall teach<sup>1</sup> ;  
 Both how to drink water, and hay for to reach :  
 More stroken and made of, when aught it doth (*b*) ail,  
 More gentle ye make it, for yoke or the pail.

- Of gelding. 32. Geld bull-calf and ram-lamb, as soon as they fall<sup>2</sup>,  
 For therein is, lightly, no danger at all.  
 Some spareth the t'one, for to pleasure the eye,  
 To have him shew greater, when butcher shall buy.

- ¶ 33. Sows ready to farrow this time of the year,  
 Are for to be made of, and counted full dear<sup>3</sup>.  
 For now is the loss of a (*c*) fare of the sow,  
 More great than the loss of two calves of thy cow.

## VARIATIONS.

(*b*) do.(*c*) the.

<sup>1</sup> What Tusser remarks in regard to the older animals teaching the younger, we often see exemplified in the human race. The first child in a family must be taught many things which his brothers and sisters learn by example and imitation. Hence, this is an argument in favor of public education ; but the discussion of such a subject is irrelevant to the present purpose.

<sup>2</sup> Hilman says, that in animals intended to be reared, a fortnight old for a calf, and five days for a

lamb, will do as well as earlier ; and it seems to be a rational practice to allow the young to gain a little strength. Experience must decide on this subject, and therefore any farther comment on the subject will be unnecessary.

<sup>3</sup> Young pigs, at this season of the year, are reared with greater trouble, but they are doubtless more valuable, as they will be fit for pork by Michaelmas, or bacon by Christmas.



34. Of one sow, together, rear few above five,  
And those of the fairest, and likest to thrive.  
Ungelt, of the best keep a couple for store,  
One boar pig and sow pig, that sucketh before <sup>1</sup>.

35. Who hath a desire, to have store very large,  
At Whitsuntide, let him give huswife a charge,  
To rear of a sow at once only but three ;  
And one of them also a boar let it be.

¶  
A way to have  
large breed of  
hogs.

36. Geld under the dam, within fortnight at least <sup>2</sup>,  
And save both thy money, and life of the beast.  
Geld later with gelders, as many one do ;  
And look of a dozen, to geld away two.

¶  
Gelding time

37. Thy colts for the saddle, geld young to be light ;  
For cart do not so, if thou judgest aright ;  
Nor geld not, but when they be lusty and fat,  
For there is a point, to be learned in that.

Gelding of  
horse colts.

38. Geld fillies (but tits) ere a nine days of age,  
They die else of gelding, (or gelders do rage.)

Gelding of  
fillies.

---

<sup>1</sup> The strongest pigs are observed to suck foremost, because there they find milk in the greatest abundance. If a part are sold off for roasters, the number need only be limited by the visible means of subsistence, unless, as in the next stanza, the size of the breed is to be encreased.

<sup>2</sup> Whether Tusser's recommenda-

tion entirely corresponds with the present practice, the editor does not pretend to decide. The old adage, *ne sutor ultra crepidam*, warns him to desist, and to leave this discussion to the experienced operator. Yet much care, attention, and adroitness are necessary, in order to prevent loss, for some risk is always incurred.



## January's Husbandry.

Young fillies (*b*) so likely of bulk and of bone,  
Keep such to be breeders, let gelding alone.

Rear the fairest of all things.

39. For gaining a trifle, sell never thy store<sup>1</sup>,  
What joy to acquaintance, what pleasureth more?  
The larger of body, the better for breed,  
More forward of growing, the better they speed.

¶ Of cow and sow.

40. Good milch cow, well fed, and (*b c*) that is fair and sound<sup>2</sup>,  
Is yearly for profit, as good as a pound:  
And yet by the year, have I proved ere now,  
As good to the purse, is a sow as a cow.

¶ 41. Keep one and keep both, with as little a cost,  
Then all shall be saved, and nothing be lost:  
Both having together, what profit is caught,  
Good huswives (I warrant ye) need not be taught.

---

VARIATIONS.

(*b*) fils.

(*bc*) want *and*.

---

<sup>1</sup> Though it may be both creditable and pleasant to see a large and fine breed on a farm, the propriety of affecting this distinction must depend on the means of support, or may be resolved into the nature of the soil. Poor land will not maintain Herefordshire cattle; nor would the sheep of Lincolnshire thrive on the Sussex Downs.

<sup>2</sup> If the profit of a milch cow in the reign of Elizabeth was as good

as a pound, it certainly ought not to be less than ten pounds at the present period, when the value of money is so much depreciated, and the rent of land so much raised. That a sow may be made as profitable as a cow, is scarcely to be questioned, especially if the latter is kept, "as good huswives know without being taught." The case however, is otherwise, where sows are kept without the assistance of the dairy.

42. For lamb, pig, and calf, and for other the like,  
Tithe so, as thy cattle the Lord do not strike <sup>1</sup> :  
Or if ye deal guilefully, parson will drive,  
And so to yourself, a worse turn ye may give.
43. Thy garden plot lately, well trenched and muckt <sup>2</sup>,  
Would now be twi-fallow'd, the mallows out pluckt,  
Well cleansed and purged, of root and of stone,  
That fault therein afterward, found may be none.
44. Remember thy hop-yard, if season be dry <sup>3</sup>,  
Now dig it and weed it, and so let it lie.  
More fenny the layer, the better his lust,  
More apt to bear hops, when it crumbles like dust.
45. To arbour begun, and quicksetted about <sup>4</sup>,  
No poleing or wadling, till set be far out :

Weeding of  
hop-yard.

Trimming up  
arbours.

<sup>1</sup> Tusser was not only a practical farmer, but once a tithe renter, and this enabled him to judge of the relative situation of both. But his sense of religion as well as of morality, taught him not to defraud the Church, or to withhold from the parson his dues ; for however reluctantly tithes may be paid by some, it argues equal ignorance and want of principle to consider them in any other light than as a just rent, for which the owner of the land makes an adequate allowance. It is folly, or deserves a harsher term, for a farmer to think that he is conferring a

favor on a clergyman, when he yields him his fair rights. It is the landlord in reality, not the tenant, who pays the tithes.

<sup>2</sup> To trench and manure gardens in autumn, in order to be ready for the spring crops, is conformable to the most approved modes of horticulture.

<sup>3</sup> A soil somewhat moist, but of easy pulverization, is reckoned best for hops, but it should have a warm exposure.

<sup>4</sup> Arbours of hawthorn would ill match with the tinsel finery of modern females ; nor indeed are they

## January's Husbandry.

For rotten and aged may stand for a shew,  
But hold to their tackling, there do (*a*) but (*a*) a few.

Sowing of oats. 46. In January, husband that poucheth the groats <sup>1</sup>,  
Late sowing  
not good. Will break up his ley, or be sowing of oats.

Oats sown in January, lay by the wheat,—  
In May buy the hay, for the (*a*) cattle to eat.

47. Let servant be ready, with mattock in hand <sup>2</sup>,  
'To stub out the bushes, that noyeth the land.  
And cumbersome roots, so annoying the plough,  
Turn upward their a—s—s, with sorrow enough.

Breaking up  
ley in some  
country. 48. Who breaketh up, timely, his fallow or ley <sup>3</sup>,  
Sets forward his husbandry, many a way :

---

 VARIATION.

(*a a*) cannot.

(*a*) thy.

---

fashionable in any form. The principle, however, is just, not to begin propping or supporting plants too early.

<sup>1</sup> Oats sown in January would be most likely to rise free from weeds; but it is not often that the season and the soil will admit of such early culture. The whole stanza is somewhat enigmatical. The standard editions uniformly read "by the hay," &c.; but the more modern, have "buy thee," &c. The obvious meaning is, provide early what may be required, that you

may escape risques of failure and dearth. If you buy your hay in May, you are prepared against the worst.

<sup>2</sup> In breaking up ley, this may sometimes be necessary; but not when the land has been in a good state of previous cultivation.

<sup>3</sup> There are certain seasons when particular labours may be forwarded with great advantage to the general business of agriculture; and not to neglect them is a proof of prudence and forethought.

This trimly well ended, doth forwardly bring,  
Not only thy tillage, but all other thing.

49. Though ley land ye break up, when Christmas is  
gone <sup>1</sup>,

For sowing of barley, or oats thereupon;  
Yet haste not to fallow, till March be begun,  
Lest afterward wishing, it had been undone.

50. Such land as ye break up, for barley to sow,  
Two earths at the least, ere ye sow it bestow <sup>2</sup>;  
If land be thereafter set oating apart;  
And follow this lesson to comfort thine heart.

51. Some breaking up ley, soweth oats to begin <sup>3</sup>,  
To suck out the moisture, so sower therein;  
Yet oats with her sucking a peeler is found,  
Both ill to the master, and worse to some ground.

<sup>1</sup> It is little suitable to the modern practice to sow barley on ley, or land just broke up. The second ploughing, or the fallow, as our author calls it, should be delayed till March, in order that the soil may pulverize, and the insects be killed, though the first ploughing may be performed even after or before Christmas.

<sup>2</sup> Barley ground should be brought to a fine tilth; and when you can

raise a crop of barley, never sow oats, because they may be produced on more exhausted land.

<sup>3</sup> When the land is rank, and vegetation of course too luxuriant, one or even two crops of oats may be beneficially taken, in order to fine and sweeten it; but where the soil is naturally poor and dry, oats, to use our author's phrase, "a peeler is found," that is, they will impoverish it still more.

## January's Husbandry.

52. Land arable, driven or worn to the proof,  
 It craveth some rest for thy profit's behoof<sup>1</sup>  
 With oats ye may sow it, the sooner to grass,  
 More soon to be pasture, to bring it to pass.

*Thus endeth January's Husbandry.*

---

<sup>1</sup> When land is exhausted with corn crops, which it ought never to be under a good system of management, rest is absolutely necessary ;

but fallowing is now justly exploded : artificial grasses and neutral crops do away its necessity in enclosures.

---

## FEBRUARY'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XXXIV.

1. Lay compas enow,  
Ere ever ye plow.
2. Place dung-heaps alow.  
More barley to grow.
3. Eat etch, ere ye plow,  
With hog, sheep, and cow,  
Sow lentils ye may,  
And peason grey.  
Keep white, unsown,  
Till more be known.
4. Sow pease (good trull)  
The moon past full.  
Fine seeds then sow,  
Whilst moon doth grow.
5. Boy, follow the plough,  
And harrow enough :  
So harrow, ye shall,  
Till cover'd be all,
6. Sow pease not too thin,  
Ere plough ye set in.
7. Late sown, sore noyeth ;  
Late ripe, hog stroyeth.

## February's Abstract.

8. Some provender save,  
For plough-horse to have.  
To oxen that draw,  
Give hay, and not straw.  
To steers ye may,  
Mix straw with hay.
9. Much carting, ill tillage,  
Makes some to flie village.
10. Use cattle aright,  
To keep them in plight.
11. Good quickset buy,  
Old gather'd will die (c).
12. Stick boughs a row,  
Where runcivals grow.
13. Sow kernels and haw,  
Where ridge ye did draw.
14. Sow mustard seed,  
And help to kill weed.  
Where sets do grow,  
See nothing ye sow.
15. Cut vines and osier,  
Plash hedge of enclosure.  
Feed highly thy swan,  
To love her good man.  
Nest high, I advise,  
Lest flood do arise.
16. Land meadow spare ;  
There dung is good ware.

---

 VARIATION.

(c) dry.



17. Go strike off (a) the nowls  
Of delving mowls.  
Such hillocks in vain,  
Lay levelled plain.
18. Too (bc) wet the land,  
Let mowl-hill stand.
19. Poor cattle crave,  
Some shift to have.
20. Cow little giveth,  
That hardly liveth.
21. Rid barley all now,  
Clean out of thy mow.  
Choice seed out draw,  
Save (a) cattle the straw.
22. To coast, man, ride  
Lent stuff to provide.

*Thus endeth February's Abstract, agreeing with February's Husbandry.*

## OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Trench meadow and redge,  
Dyke, quickset, and hedge,  
To plots not full,  
Add bramble and hull.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) at.

(bc) to.

(a) give.

## February's Abstract.

Let wheat and the rye,  
For thresher still lie.  
Such straw some save,  
For thatcher (*b c*) to have.

Poor coney, so bagged,  
Is soon over lagged.  
Plash burrow, set clapper,  
For dog is a snapper.

Good flight who loves,  
Must feed their doves.  
Bid hawking adieu,  
Cast hawk into mew.

Keep sheep out of briers,  
Keep beast out of miërs.  
Keep lambs from fox,  
Else shepherd go box.

Good neighbour of mine,  
Now yoke thy swine.  
Now every day,  
Set hops ye may.

Now set for thy pot,  
Best herbs to be got.  
For flowers go set,  
All sorts ye can get.

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) thacker.

As winter doth prove,  
So may ye remove.  
Now 'all things rear,  
For all the year.

Watch ponds, go look  
To weels and hook.  
Knaves seld (*a*) repent,  
To steal in Lent.

All's fish they get,  
That cometh to net.  
Who muck regards  
Makes hillocks in yards.

*Here ends February's short Remembrances.*

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) seldom.

## ¶ FEBRUARY'S HUSBANDRY.

### CHAP. XXXV.

Feb, fill the dike,  
With what thou dost like.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. Who layeth on dung, ere he layeth on plow <sup>1</sup>,  
Such husbandry useth, as thrift doth allow :  
One month ere ye spread it, so still let it stand,  
Ere ever to plow it, ye take it in hand.
2. Place dung heap alow, by the furrow along <sup>2</sup>,  
Where water, all winter-time, did it such wrong :  
So make ye the land to be lusty and fat,  
And corn thereon sown, to be better for that.

---

<sup>1</sup> Whatever might have been the opinion formerly, about allowing manure to lie unspread, and without ploughing in, it certainly is contrary to modern practice, and to reason. Whether dung is suffered to lie in heaps, or is spread and remains exposed to the air, the practice is equally objectionable. In the first case, it will render the corn too rank, immediately under the heaps: in the other, the strength will be ex-

tracted by the sun or the weather, and nothing but a *caput mortuum* left.

<sup>2</sup> As the soil is always most shallow near the furrow, where the ground is thrown up into ridges, it may not be amiss to allow it a larger portion of manure; but care must be taken that it is not washed away, should the furrow act as a drain to the land.

3. Go plow in the stubble, for now is the season <sup>1</sup>,  
For sowing of vetches, of beans, and of peason.  
Sow runcivals timely, and all that is grey ;  
But sow not the white, till St. Gregory's day.
4. Sow peason and beans, in the wane of the moon <sup>2</sup>,  
Who soweth them sooner, he soweth too soon,  
That they with the planet may rest and arise,  
And flourish, with bearing most plentifulwise.
5. Friend, harrow in time, by some manner of means <sup>3</sup>,  
Not only thy peason, but also thy beans ;  
Unharrowed die, being buried in clay,  
Where harrowed flourish, as flowers in May.
6. Both peason and beans, sow afore ye do plow <sup>4</sup>,  
The sooner ye harrow, the better for you.  
White peason so good, for the purse and the pot,  
Let them be well used, else well do ye not.

<sup>1</sup> Stubble, according to modern usage, is generally recommended to be plowed in before this month, especially wheat. Beans are now seldom sown, but dibbled ; and this kind of pulse, as well as pease, whether grey or white, are usually committed to the ground before St. Gregory's day, which is the 12th of March.

<sup>2</sup> The absurdity of planetary influence on the fruits of the earth, has already been more than once adverted to. This stanza, however, is indicative of the belief of our ancestors. That the moon has a considerable effect on the weather, few

meteorologists will doubt ; but that the wane or the increase of this luminary promotes or retards vegetation, *per se*, is contrary to reason and experience.

<sup>3</sup> To harrow early after sowing, is a judicious measure, and it is seldom neglected, even by the worst farmers.

<sup>4</sup> Sowing pease and beans under furrow, as it is called, that is before the second plowing, is not to be compared with dibbling and drilling. White pease, when meagre days were observed by all classes of the community, must have been necessarily cultivated to a great extent.

## February's Husbandry.

7. Have eye unto harvest, whatever ye sow <sup>1</sup>,  
For fear of mischances, by riping too slow ;  
Lest corn be destroyed, contrary to right,  
By hogs or by cattle, by day or by night.
8. Good provender, labouring horses would have <sup>2</sup>,  
Good hay and good plenty, plough-oxen do crave ;  
To hale out thy muck, and to plow up (c) thy  
ground,  
Or else it may hinder thee many a pound.
9. Who slacketh his tillage, a carter to be,  
Fer groat got abroad, at home lose shall three ;  
And so by his doing, he brings out of heart,  
Both land for the corn, and horse for the cart.

---

 VARIATION.

(c) out.

---

<sup>1</sup> When the greatest part of the land was unenclosed, and therefore late sown corn was exposed to the danger of commonage, before it could be separated from the ground, this precept, "of having an eye to the harvest," was more immediately necessary. Every prudent farmer, however, will attend to it in all things, and neither be too early nor too late in sowing, that he may have a chance of reaping in due season.

<sup>2</sup> To starve labouring cattle is equally impolitic and cruel; they ought to be kept in good working condition: some, indeed, pamper

them too much. From this stanza, if other evidence were wanting, it appears that oxen were generally employed in the labours of agriculture, during the reign of Elizabeth. It is the union of luxury, laziness, and prejudice, that has rendered them unfashionable. Till they are again commonly used, we cannot expect either meat or corn to be cheap; for while the farmer keeps a number of horses, a great quantity of land must be devoted to their support, no less to his own detriment than that of the public.

10. Who abuseth his cattle, and starves them for meat <sup>1</sup>,  
By carting or plowing, his gain is not great :  
Where he that with labour, can use them aright,  
Hath gain to his comfort, and cattle in plight.
11. Buy quickset at market, new gather'd and small <sup>2</sup>,  
Buy bushes or willow, to fence it withall :  
Set willows to grow, in the stead of a stake,  
For cattle, in summer, a shadow to make.
12. Stick plenty of boughs among runcival pease,  
To climber thereon, and to branch at their ease ;  
So doing, more tender and greater they wax,  
If peacock and turkey leave jobbing their bex <sup>3</sup>.
13. Now sow, and go harrow (where redge ye did draw) <sup>4</sup>  
The seed of the bramble, with kernel and haw ;  
Which covered, overly, sun to shut out,  
Go see it be ditched, and fenced about.

¶  
Runcival  
peason.

<sup>1</sup> It is the misfortune and the impolicy of small farmers, that they will employ their teams for hire, in order to secure a little casual gain ; while at the same time they are neglecting the proper culture of their land, and wearing out their cattle. Let such remember the maxim of our author :—

Who slacketh his tillage, a carter to be,  
For groat got abroad, at home will lose three.

<sup>2</sup> Quicksets should not be too old before they are planted ; and ex-

cept in mending gaps, they are now usually secured by posts and rails. It is judicious to plant willow-poles, instead of dead stakes, not only for durability but profit, where the situation is favourable for the production of this valuable aquatic.

<sup>3</sup> It appears that turkeys and peacocks were commonly kept in the time of Tusser, or he would not have alluded to their depredations on pease. A peacock is now a *rara avis*. Though the most beautiful of domestic fowls, he is far from being profitable.

<sup>4</sup> Formerly common fields were fenced off from the pastures, by



Sow mustard-  
seed. 14. Where banks be amended, and newly up-cast,  
Sow mustard-seed, after a shower be past <sup>1</sup>,  
Where plots full of nettles (*a*) be noisome to eye,  
Sow thereupon hemp-seed, and nettle will die.

Cut or set  
vines. 15. The vines and the osiers cut, and go set <sup>2</sup>,  
If grape be unpleasant, a better go get.  
Feed swan, and go make her up strongly a nest,  
For fear of a flood, good and high is the best.

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) full a' nettles.

---

making a ridge of perhaps twenty or thirty feet, which was sown with hips, haws, hazle-nuts, and such like, ditching it round, and weeding it at intervals. In due time this became a productive coppice; and is what we now term, a shaw or spring. On all exposed situations, it is an excellent method of bringing them into cultivation, by furnishing shelter for the tender vegetation.

<sup>1</sup> In marshy countries, mustard is still sown on the banks of ditches newly scoured out. Where nettles will grow, hemp may be raised to advantage. The former, though not wholly useless, are seldom applied to any valuable purpose, but remain a stigma on the industry of the farmer, who suffers any part of his land to be overrun with them. The

importance of hemp, on the other hand, is well known, yet it is little cultivated.

<sup>2</sup> It appears from antiquarian researches, that vines were once planted to a greater extent in this island than at the present period. The black grape and the white muscadine are most profitable and thrive best; but it is seldom that our summers are warm enough to bring them to perfection, without artificial means.—The cultivation of osiers in some counties, particularly in Berkshire, is now an object of some consequence, and is conducted on the best principle.—Formerly swans seem to have been bred for private emolument, and the young to have been considered as a dainty dish at the tables of opulence.

16. Land-meadow that yearly is spared for hay,  
Now fence it and spare it, and dung it ye may.  
Get mole-catcher cunningly mole for to kill <sup>1</sup>,  
And harrow, and cast abroad every hill.

Catching of  
moles.

17. Where meadow or pasture, to mow ye do lay,  
Let mole be dispatched, some manner of way :  
Then cast abroad mole-hill, as flat as ye can,  
For many commodities following than.

18. If pasture by nature, is given to be wet,  
Then bear with the mole-hill, though thick it be set <sup>2</sup> ;  
'That lamb may sit on it, and so to sit dry,  
Or else to lie by it, the warmer to lie.

19. Friend, always let this be a part of thy care,  
For shift of good pasture, lay pasture to spare.  
So have you good feeding in bushets and leaze <sup>3</sup>,  
And quickly safe finding of cattle at ease.

Look well to  
thy fence.

<sup>1</sup> All this is good advice, but it requires no explanation. The mole-catcher is properly enough directed to be applied to, and therefore the various modes of destroying moles need not be enumerated. It may, however, be novel to some to be informed, that they may be taken with dogs, properly trained. This may serve to diversify the life of a professed hunter !

<sup>2</sup> That moles may afford a partial drainage to a wet soil admits of no dispute; but he must be a slovenly farmer indeed who would trust to

such casual aids, especially since the art of draining has been so well understood, and so successfully applied. As for mole-hills forming a warm and dry station for lambs, the same may be said with much greater propriety of ant-hills ; yet neither would be suffered to remain on a well-managed farm.

<sup>3</sup> Small enclosures or leazes near the homestall have many advantages, particularly in allowing frequent change of pasture, security, and facility of superintendence. Cattle likewise thrive better in such situa-

## February's Husbandry.

20. Where cattle may run about roving at will,  
From pasture to pasture, poor belly to fill ;  
There pasture and cattle, both hungry and bare,  
For want of good husbandry worser do fare.
21. Now thresh out thy barley, for malt or for seed <sup>1</sup>,  
For bread-corn, if need be, to serve as shall need :  
If work for the thresher, ye mind for to have,  
Of wheat and of mestlin, unthreshed go save.
22. Now timely for Lent stuff, thy money disburse <sup>2</sup>,  
The longer ye tarry, for profit the worse ;

---

tions than where they are allowed to "to rove at will." A certain degree of restraint is necessary for domestic animals, in order to make them feed and grow.

<sup>1</sup> During February, barley may be threshed to advantage, as the demand for it will be at the heighth, and straw most likely to be wanted. As for saving work for the thresher, it is to be hoped that threshing-machines will soon render such slavish employment unnecessary, and that the labourer will be more pleasantly and profitably engaged on the general business of the farm, than on task-work in a barn.

<sup>2</sup> It is to be regretted, both on the score of policy and health, that in reforming false principles, we renounced salutary practices. Days of abstinence from flesh-meat, if not prescribed by authority, should be voluntarily imposed on ourselves.

If the fisherman purchases bread of the farmer, the farmer in his turn ought to encourage the fisherman, who in peace and war has the highest claims to support. We strangely overlook the advantages of our situation, and prefer subsisting on animals reared at a great expense, to the impoverishment of the country, rather than on fish, which cost nothing, save labour and time. To complain of the dearth of provisions is ridiculous, while we have only ourselves so blame. Refrain from meat two days in the week, and more land will be saved for the growth of corn. In this island, the supply of fish might always be equal to the demand. It is by the smallness of the consumption that monopolies in fish are supported; and thus half is frequently wasted or thrown away, in order to keep up the price.

If one penny vantage, be therein to save,  
Of coastman or Fleming be siür (*b*) to have.

*Thus endeth February's Husbandry.*

---

VARIATION.

(*b*) sure.

---

# ¶ MARCH'S ABSTRACT

## CHAP. XXXVI.

1. WHITE peason sow,  
Scare hungry crow.
2. Spare meadow for hay,  
Spare marshes at May.
3. Keep sheep from dog,  
Keep lambs from hog :  
If foxes mouse (*a*) them,  
Then watch, or house them.
4. March dry or wet,  
Hop-ground go set.  
Young roots well drest,  
Prove ever (*a*) best.  
Grant hop great hill,  
To grow at will.  
From hop long gut,  
Away go cut.
5. Here learn the way,  
Hop roots to lay.
6. Roots best to prove,  
Thus set I love.

### VARIATIONS.

(*a*) mouth.

(*a*) *adds* the.

7. Leave space and room,  
To hillock to come.
8. Of hedge and willow,  
Hop makes his pillow.  
Good bearing hop,  
Climbs up to the top.  
Keep hop from sun,  
And hop is undone.
9. Hop-poles procure,  
That may endure.  
Iron crow, like a stake,  
Deep hole to make.  
A scraper to pare,  
The earth about bare.  
A hone, to raise root,  
Like sole of a boot.  
Sharp knife to cut,  
Superfluous gut.
10. Who graffing loves,  
Now graffing proves.  
Of every suit,  
Graff dainty fruit.  
Graff good fruit all,  
Or graff not at all.
11. Graff soon may be lost,  
Both graffing and cost.  
Learn here, take heed,  
What counsel doth bid (*b c*).

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) heed.

## March's Abstract.

12. Sow barley that can,  
Too soon ye shall ban.  
Let horse keep his own,  
Till barley be sown.  
Sow even thy land,  
With plentiful hand :  
Sow over and under,  
In clay is no wonder.
13. By sowing in wet,  
Is little to get.
14. Straight follow the plough,  
And harrow enough.  
With sling go throw,  
To scare away crow.
15. Roll, after a dew,  
When barley doth shew ;  
More handsome to make it,  
To mow and to rake it.
16. Learn here ye may,  
Best harrowing way.
17. Now roll thy wheat,  
Where clods be too great.
18. Make ready a plot,  
For seeds for the pot.
19. Best searching minds,  
The best way finds.
20. For garden best,  
Is south, south-west.
21. Good tilth brings seeds,  
Ill (*b c*) ticulture, weeds.

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) evil.



22. For summer sow now,  
For winter see how.
23. Learn time to know,  
To set, or sow.
24. Young plants soon die,  
That grow (a) too dry.
25. In country doth rest,  
What season is best.
26. Good peason and leeks,  
Make pottage for creeks.
27. Have spoon-meat enough,  
For cart and the plough.  
Good poor man's fare,  
Is poor man's care ;  
And not to boast,  
Of sod and roast.
28. Cause rook and raven,  
To seek a new haven.

*Thus endeth March's Abstract, agreeing with March's  
Husbandry.*

¶ OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

Geld lambs now all,  
Straight as they fall.  
Look twice a-day,  
Lest lambs decay.

---

VARIATION.

(a) The earlier editions have *grows* : This anomaly has already  
been noticed.

## March's Abstract.

Where horse did harrow  
Put stones in barrow ;  
And lay them by,  
In heaps on high.

Let ox once fat,  
Lose nothing of that.  
Now hunt with dog,  
Unyoked hog.

Wish doves good luck,  
Rear goose and duck.  
To spare aright,  
Spare March his flight.

### SEEDS AND HERBS FOR THE KITCHEN <sup>1</sup>.

- |                                         |                                |
|-----------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. Avens.                               | 6. Burnet.                     |
| 2. Betony.                              | 7. Borrage.                    |
| 3. Bleets or beets, white<br>or yellow. | 8. Cabbage, remove in<br>June. |
| 4. Bloodwort.                           | 9. Clary.                      |
| 5. Bugloss.                             | 10. Coleworts.                 |

<sup>1</sup> Horticulture began to become fashionable in the sixteenth century, as appears from several publications on the subject, still extant ; and in this list of herbs and seeds for the kitchen, we find some vegetables which are rejected by the moderns, and others whose very names it is difficult to refer to their present synonyms. In the glossary will be

found such explanations, as may reasonably be required. It is evident that many plants were cultivated for their fancied medical virtues. Betony, avens, bloodwort, burnet, bugloss, ox tongue, or lang de beef, a corruption of langue du bœuf, and some others, are of this kind. Every age has its absurdities : we now depend too much on chemicals.

- |                                          |                                                                |
|------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------|
| 11. Cresses.                             | 27. Patience.                                                  |
| 12. Endive.                              | 28. Parsley.                                                   |
| 13. Fennel.                              | 29. Penny-royal.                                               |
| 14. French mallows.                      | 30. Primrose.                                                  |
| 15. French saffron, set in<br>August.    | 31. Poret.                                                     |
| 16. Lang de beef.                        | 32. Rosemary, in the spring<br>time, to grow south<br>or west. |
| 17. Leeks, remove in June.               | 33. Sage, red and white.                                       |
| 18. Lettuce, remove in May.              | 34. English saffron, set in<br>August.                         |
| 19. Longwort.                            | 35. Summer savory.                                             |
| 20. Liverwort.                           | 36. Sorrell.                                                   |
| 21. Marigolds, often cut.                | 37. Spinage.                                                   |
| 22. Mercury.                             | 38. Succory.                                                   |
| 23. Mints, at all times.                 | 39. Siethes.                                                   |
| 24. Nep.                                 | 40. Tansey.                                                    |
| 25. Onions, from Decem-<br>ber to March. | 41. Thyme.                                                     |
| 26. Orache or arache, red<br>and white.  | 42. Violets of all sorts.                                      |

## HERBS AND ROOTS FOR SALLADS AND SAUCE <sup>1</sup>.

- |                                                 |                                                |
|-------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Alexanders, at all times.                    | 4. Cucumbers, in April<br>and May.             |
| 2. Artichokes.                                  |                                                |
| 3. Blessed Thistle, or Car-<br>duus Benedictus. | 5. Cresses, sow with lettuce<br>in the spring. |

<sup>1</sup> In this list we likewise find several vegetables which modern appetites would not much relish. The blessed thistle, Alexanders, and

some others which are enumerated, are now unknown in culinary formulas, either for sallads or sauce.

## March's Abstract.

- |                                                              |                                                                 |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|
| 6. Endive.                                                   | two years, and then                                             |
| 7. Mustard-seed, sow in<br>the spring, and at<br>Michaelmas. | remove.                                                         |
| 8. Musk-Million, in April<br>and May.                        | 19. Skirrets, set these plants<br>in March.                     |
| 9. Mints.                                                    | 20. Succory.                                                    |
| 10. Purslane.                                                | 21. Tarragon, set in slips<br>in March.                         |
| 11. Radish, and (c) after<br>remove them.                    | 22. Violets, of all colours.                                    |
| 12. Rampions.                                                | These buy with the penny,<br>Or look not for any <sup>1</sup> . |
| 13. Rocket, in April.                                        |                                                                 |
| 14. Sage.                                                    | 1. Capers.                                                      |
| 15. Sorrell.                                                 | 2. Lemons.                                                      |
| 16. Spinage, for the sum-<br>mer.                            | 3. Olives.                                                      |
| 17. Sea-holy.                                                | 4. Oranges.                                                     |
| 18. Sparage (b), let grow                                    | 5. Rice.                                                        |
|                                                              | 6. Samphire.                                                    |

---

### VARIATIONS.

(c) wants *and*.

(b) sperage.

---

<sup>1</sup> Our ancestors do not appear to have used many exotic fruits and condiments; and rice certainly belongs to grain rather than to either of them. Spices of any kind are not named; and except ginger, perhaps health is little promoted by the

introduction of so many foreign vegetable productions. It is curious, however, to compare what was formerly esteemed, with what is now raised or imported, throughout the whole of Tusser's vegetable distributions.

## HERBS AND ROOTS, TO BOIL OR TO BUTTER <sup>1</sup>.

- |                                                 |                                      |
|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Beans, set in winter.                        | 7. Pompions; in May.                 |
| 2. Cabbages, sow in March,<br>and after remove. | 8. Parsneps, in winter.              |
| 3. Carrots.                                     | 9. Runcival pease, set in<br>winter. |
| 4. Citrons, sow in May.                         | 10. Rapes, sow in June.              |
| 5. Gourds, in May.                              | 11. Turneps, in March and<br>April.  |
| 6. Navews, sow in June.                         |                                      |

## STREWING HERBS OF ALL SORTS <sup>2</sup>.

- |                                          |                                                           |
|------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Basil, fine and busht,<br>sow in May. | 13. Marjoram, knotted, sow<br>or set, at the spring.      |
| 2. Baulm, set in March.                  | 14. Maudeline.                                            |
| 3. Camomile.                             | 15. Penny royal.                                          |
| 4. Costmary                              | 16. Roses of all sorts, in<br>January and Sep-<br>tember. |
| 5. Cowslips and paggles.                 | 17. Red mints.                                            |
| 6. Daisies of all sorts.                 | 18. Sage.                                                 |
| 7. Sweet fennell.                        | 19. Tansey.                                               |
| 8. Germander.                            | 20. Violets.                                              |
| 9. Hysop, set in February.               | 21. Winter savory.                                        |
| 10. Lavender.                            |                                                           |
| 11. Lavender spike.                      |                                                           |
| 12. Lavender cotton.                     |                                                           |

<sup>1</sup> "The herbs and roots, to boil or to butter," though the catalogue has since been very considerably enlarged, are none of them obsolete in their application.

<sup>2</sup> When domestic cleanliness was less regarded, strong or sweet scent-

ed herbs and flowers were liberally strewed in passages and apartments. This practice is highly improper, and is justly discontinued, as the smell of some is deleterious, and the effluvia of very few, indeed, can be conducive to health.

## March's Abstract.

HERBS, BRANCHES, AND FLOWERS, FOR WINDOWS AND  
POTS<sup>1</sup>.

- |                                                 |                                                                                                                                               |
|-------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Bays, sow or plant in<br>January.            | 12. Flower gentle, white<br>and red.                                                                                                          |
| 2. Bachelors' buttons.                          | 13. Flower nice.                                                                                                                              |
| 3. Bottles, blue, red, and<br>tawney.           | 14. Gillyflowers, red, white,<br>and carnations, set in<br>spring, and at har-<br>vest in pots, pails, or<br>tubs, or for summer,<br>in beds. |
| 4. Columbines                                   | 15. Holyoaks, red, white,<br>and carnations.                                                                                                  |
| 5. Campions.                                    | 16. Indian eye, sow in May,<br>or set in slips in<br>March.                                                                                   |
| 6. Cowslips.                                    | 17. Lavender of all sorts.                                                                                                                    |
| 7. Daffodils, or daffadon-<br>dillies.          | 18. Lark's foot.                                                                                                                              |
| 8. Eglantine, or sweet-<br>brier.               |                                                                                                                                               |
| 9. Fetherfew.                                   |                                                                                                                                               |
| 10. Flower amour ( <i>b c</i> ), sow<br>in May. |                                                                                                                                               |
| 11. Flower de luce.                             |                                                                                                                                               |

## VARIATIONS.

(*b c*) have *armor* and *armour*.

---

<sup>1</sup> The delicate olfactory nerves of modern females would revolt at *feverfew*, and several other plants in this list, if placed in their windows; while many more which are here enumerated may be easily raised in the natural ground, without the trouble and expense of pots. I have

not been able to discover the modern synonym of *laus tibi*, and one or two others. More practised botanists may perhaps find no difficulty of this kind. Chance often brings to light what is searched for in vain. *Non omnia possumus omnes.*

- |                                                                     |                                             |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| 19. Laus tibi.                                                      | 31. Sops in wine.                           |
| 20. Lillium convallium ( <i>b</i> ).                                | 32. Sweet Williams.                         |
| 21. Lilies, red and white,<br>sow or set in March<br>and September. | 33. Sweet Johns.                            |
| 22. Marigolds double.                                               | 34. Star of Bethlem.                        |
| 23. Nigella Romana.                                                 | 35. Star of Jerusalem.                      |
| 24. Pansies, or hearts-ease.                                        | 36. Stock gilliflowers of all<br>sorts.     |
| 25. Paggles, green and yel-<br>low.                                 | 37. Tuft gilliflowers.                      |
| 26. Pinks of all sorts.                                             | 38. Velvet flowers, or French<br>marigolds. |
| 27. Queen's gilliflowers.                                           | 39. Violets, yellow and<br>white.           |
| 28. Rosemary.                                                       | 40. Wall gilliflowers of all<br>sorts.      |
| 29. Roses of all sorts.                                             |                                             |
| 30. Snap-dragon.                                                    |                                             |

## HERBS TO STILL IN SUMMER <sup>1</sup>.

- |                     |               |
|---------------------|---------------|
| 1. Blessed thistle. | 6. Fennell.   |
| 2. Betony.          | 7. Fumitory.  |
| 3. Dill.            | 8. Hysop.     |
| 4. Endive.          | 9. Mints.     |
| 5. Eyebright.       | 10. Plantane. |

## VARIATION.

(*b*) cum valium.

---

<sup>1</sup> The art of distilling simples was not unknown at an early period, and was regularly practised by careful matrons, for family purposes, as occasional medicines, or agréable

drams. We have now, however, discarded the greatest part of Tusser's list as useless; and found more beneficial or pleasant substitutes for others.



## Barch's Abstract.

- |                            |                          |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|
| 11. Roses, red and damask. | 15. Sorrell.             |
| 12. Respies.               | 16. Succory.             |
| 13. Saxifrage.             | 17. Woodroffe, for sweet |
| 14. Strawberries.          | waters and cakes.        |

### NECESSARY HERBS TO GROW IN THE GARDEN FOR PHYSIC, NOT REHEARSED BEFORE<sup>1</sup>.

- |                                     |                               |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Annise.                          | 16. Peony.                    |
| 2. Archangel.                       | 17. Poppy.                    |
| 3. Betony.                          | 18. Rue.                      |
| 4. Chervil.                         | 19. Rhubarb.                  |
| 5. Cinqfoil.                        | 20. Smallage, for swellings.  |
| 6. Cummin.                          | 21. Saxifrage, for the stone. |
| 7. Dragons.                         | 22. Savin, for the botts.     |
| 8. Dittany, or garden gin-<br>ger.  | 23. Stitchwort.               |
| 9. Gromwell seed, for the<br>stone. | 24. Valerian.                 |
|                                     | 25. Woodbine.                 |
- 
- |                            |                     |
|----------------------------|---------------------|
| 10. Hartstongue.           | Thus ends in brief, |
| 11. Horehound.             | Of herbs the chief. |
| 12. Lovage, for the stone. | To get more skill,  |
| 13. Licquorice.            | Read whom ye will : |
| 14. Mandrake.              | Such mo to have,    |
| 15. Mugwort.               | Of field go crave.  |

<sup>1</sup> When Galenicals were in vogue, and had medical men been less partial to chemicals, the human constitution would have been more safe! prescriptions were generally drawn from vegetables; and we find some in this list of acknowledged efficacy; though it must be allowed that the greatest part are inert, or inapplicable as remedies to the disorders for which they are proposed. As an au-

thentic picture, however, of horticulture, and of domestic medicine, in the sixteenth century, the whole of these lists are interesting. The concluding lines are the fruits of good sense. It is in the fields that the knowledge of vegetable nature is to be acquired; and not solely by reading books, however excellent in their kind.

# † MARCH'S HUSBANDRY.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

March dust to be sold,  
Worth ransom of gold.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. WHITE peason, both good for the pot and the purse,  
By sowing too timely, prove often the worse ;  
Because they be tender, and hateth the cold,  
Prove March ere ye sow them, for being too bold.

2. Spare meadow at Gregory, marshes at Pasque<sup>1</sup>,  
For fear of dry summer no longer time ask.  
Then hedge them and ditch them, bestow thereon  
pence,—  
Corn, meadow, and pasture, ask alway good fence.

Spare eating  
of meadow.

3. Of mastiffs and mongrels that many we see<sup>2</sup>,  
A number of thousands too many there be :

In Lent have  
an eye to  
sheep-biters.

---

<sup>1</sup> St. Gregory's day, as we have observed in a former note, is the 12th of March, and Pasque or Easter usually follows it in less than a month. Dry meadows, therefore, are to be trained up more early than marshes, for very obvious reasons, though the present practice allows depasturing either, till the end of March, and frequently much later. Fences and ditches, however, cannot too early be made good.

<sup>2</sup> Although the influence of a very patriotic sumptuary tax has diminished the number of dogs, we have still "thousands too many." However, as Lent now makes little difference in the mode of living, which it certainly did in the earlier period of the reformation, our dogs are not driven by our meagre diet to prey on the lambs; and therefore need not be particularly watched on this account.

## March's Husbandry.

Watch therefore in Lent, to thy sheep go and look,  
For dogs will have victuals, by hook or by crook.

Setting of  
hops.

4. In March at the farthest, dry season or wet,  
Hop-roots so well chosen, let skilfull go set.  
The goeler <sup>†</sup> and younger, the better I love <sup>1</sup> ;  
Well gutted and pared, the better they prove.
5. Some layeth them, cross-wise, along in the ground,  
As high as the knee, they do cover up round.  
Some prick up a stick in the midst of the same,  
That little round hillock, the better to frame.
6. Some maketh a hollowness half a foot deep,  
With fouër sets in it, set slant-wise asteep ;  
One foot from another, in order to lie,  
And thereon a hillock, as round as a pie.
7. Five foot from another, each hillock would stand <sup>2</sup>,  
As straight as a levelled line with the hand :  
Let every hillock be fouër feet wide,  
The better to come to, on every side.

---

### VARIATION.

<sup>†</sup> Some of the later editions read *goodlier*.

---

<sup>1</sup> Hilman explains *goeler* by *yellow*, as being preferable to the old roots, which have a reddish tinge. The word *goeler* is uniformly used in all the standard editions, though I confess myself unacquainted with its derivation.

<sup>2</sup> The management of hop-grounds at the present period is perfectly understood, and need not be enlarged on in this place. But it cannot be irrelevant to remark, that considering the recent introduction of the cultivated plant when

8. By willows that groweth, thy hop-yard without<sup>1</sup>,  
And also by hedges, thy meadows about,  
Good hop hath a pleasure to climb and to spread,  
If sun may have passage, to comfort her head.
9. Get crow made of iron, deep hole for to make<sup>2</sup>,  
With cross overthwart it, as sharp as a stake,  
A hone and a parer, like sole of a boot,  
To pare away grass, and to raise up the root. Hop-roots.
10. In March is good grafting, the skilfull do know<sup>3</sup>,  
So long as the wind in the east do not blow :  
From moon being changed, till past be the prime,  
For grafting and cropping, is very good time. Grafting.
11. Things grafted or planted, the greatest and least,  
Defend against tempest, the bird, and the beast;  
Defended shall prosper, the tother is lost,  
The thing with the labour, the time and the cost.

Tusser wrote, it is wonderful how much attention seems early to have been bestowed on it, and how much knowledge of managing plantations to advantage to have been acquired. The culture of hops was introduced into England from the Netherlands, in 1524; and they are first mentioned in the Statute Book, in 1552, temp. Ed. VI.

<sup>1</sup> No trees appear preferable to willows for fencing hop-grounds; and none are said to be worse than elms, as they attract mildews.

<sup>2</sup> The iron crow is to let the poles into the ground. The hone is no other than a rubber to sharpen the

parer, and it seems to have been formerly shaped like the sole of a boot.

<sup>3</sup> The sap in trees, which resembles the blood in animals, being now rising, or beginning to circulate, assists to heal any wounds made in the plant; and therefore March, if open and mild, is best adapted for grafting. As far as the moon may influence the state of the weather, so far, and no farther, ought her age to be regarded. The weather indeed is more variable before the prime or third day than after, and more steady during the increase than in the wane.

## March's Husbandry.

- Sowing of barley. 12. Sow barley in March, in April, and May <sup>1</sup>,  
 The later (*b*) in sand, and the sooner in clay.  
 What worser for barley, than wetness and cold?  
 What better to skilfull, than time to be bold?
13. Who soweth his barley too soon, or in rain,  
 Of oats and of thistles shall after complain <sup>2</sup>:  
 I speak not of May-weed, of cockle and such,  
 That noieth the barley, so often and much.
14. Let barley be harrowed, finely as dust <sup>3</sup>,  
 Then workmanly trench it, and fence it ye must.  
 This season well plied, set sowing an end,  
 And praise and pray God, a good harvest to send.

---

### VARIATION.

(*b*) latter.

---

<sup>1</sup> As barley requires a warm and dry soil, clay can never be adapted for it, at any season, and least of all, very early. The modern practice is not in favour of either extreme in sowing; but a promptness of decision, when the soil and the weather invite, "is the time for the skilful to be bold." In a very dry season, steeping would doubtless be attended with beneficial effects.

<sup>2</sup> Thistles generally indicate a good soil, though they are never suffered to grow in any well-managed farm; and even by the road sides they should be prevented from seeding. Wild oats, to which our author

refers, are extirpated with more difficulty, as not being so easily distinguished at first, and they are still more injurious, as they sometimes usurp the soil, and choke the sown seed. May-weed, or stinking camomile, is frequently carried out with the dung: cockle and some other weeds may be separated from the seed by a sieve.

<sup>3</sup> Barley land ought always to be in fine tilth, as it is the most tender of our bread corn. Being last committed to the earth, the farmer has then little left to do for a time, but to secure his fields, and to implore the blessing of God on his labours.

15. Some rolleth their barley, straight after a rain <sup>1</sup>,  
When first it appeareth, to level it plain :  
The barley so used, the better doth grow,  
And handsome ye make it, at harvest to mow.
16. Oats, barley, and pease, harrow after you sow <sup>2</sup> ;  
For rye, harrow first, as already ye know :  
Leave wheat little clod, for to cover the head,  
That after a frost, it may out and go spread.
17. If clod in thy wheat, will not break with the frost,  
If now ye do roll it, it quiteth the cost ;  
But see when ye roll it, the weather be dry,  
Or else it were better, unrolled to lie.
18. In March and in April, from morning to night <sup>3</sup>,  
In sowing and setting, good huswives delight :  
To have in a garden or other like plot,  
To trim up their house, and to furnish their pot.

Rolling of barley.

Harrowing.

 Gardening.

<sup>1</sup> To roll barley after a shower, when the clods break most easily, is the proper season, provided the seed is out of the milk.

<sup>2</sup> Our author's meaning is, sow oats, barley, and pease above furrow, and harrow them in ; while rye is best ploughed in, with a shallow furrow. That clods, if not too large, protect wheat from the frost, will not be disputed ; yet it is adviseable to smooth it in the spring, when the land is dry ; otherwise, in the words of Tusser, " it were better unrolled to lie."

<sup>3</sup> The superintendence of the garden is properly delegated to the huswife, while the farm occupies the attention of the husband. A good kitchen garden, indeed, is indispensably necessary, both for comfort and profit ; and if the active and intelligent mistress of a family delight in plants, it will serve to fill up innocently and not unproductively, many vacant hours, which cannot be wholly devoted to in-doors employments, without the risque of health.



- ¶ 19. The nature of flowers, dame Physic doth shew ;  
 She teacheth them all, to be known to a few.  
 To set or to sow, or else sown to remove,  
 How that should be practised, learn if ye love.

To know good land. 20. Land falling or lying full south or south-west <sup>1</sup>,  
 For profit by tillage, is lightly the best :  
 So garden with orchard and hop-yard I find,  
 That want the like benefit, grow out of kind.

- ¶ 21. If field to bear corn, a good tillage doth crave <sup>2</sup>,  
 What think ye of garden, what garden would have ?  
 In field without cost, be assured of weeds ;  
 In garden be sūer, thou lovest thy seeds.

- ¶ 22. At spring (for the summer) sow garden ye shall <sup>3</sup>,  
 At harvest (for winter) or sow not at all.  
 Oft digging, removing, and weeding, ye see,  
 Makes herb the more wholesome, and greater to be.

<sup>1</sup> The aspect of land is of great consequence, either for tillage or fruit. A south and south-west exposure are unquestionably to be preferred, for reasons which do not require mentioning.

<sup>2</sup> If corn cannot be expected without good tillage, a garden, from the more delicate nature of the seeds committed to it, must be still in finer condition. It is in gardens, indeed, that experiments in agriculture ought first to be tried ; and till the fields are generally made what

gardens now are, agriculture cannot be said to be carried to its highest pitch.

<sup>3</sup> In spring, sow and plant vegetables for summer ; and in autumn, provide for the winter garden crop, which is perhaps the most valuable of the two. " To sow dry and set wet," is a wise old maxim. In regard to the moon's age, and her effect on agricultural operations and undertakings, though constantly referred to by our author, it would be ridiculous to expatiate farther.



23. Time fayer, (*b c*) to sow or to gather be bold,  
But set or remove, when the weather is cold.  
Cut all thing or gather, the moon in the wane,  
But sow in encreasing, or give it his bane. ¶
24. Now sets do ask watering, with pot or with dish<sup>1</sup>, ¶  
New sown do not so, if ye do as I wish :  
Through cunning with dibble, rake, mattock, and  
spade,  
By line, and by level, trim garden is made.
25. Who soweth too lateward, hath seldom good seed,  
Who soweth too soon, little better shall speed.  
Apt time and the season, so diverse to hit,  
Let aier and layer, help practice and wit<sup>2</sup>.
26. Now leeks are in season, for pottage full good<sup>3</sup>, ¶  
And spareth the milch-cow, and purgeth the blood :

## VARIATION.

(*b c*) faire.

<sup>1</sup> Watering is absolutely necessary in dry seasons for what is fresh planted; but not for what is recently sown. Neatness in a garden more especially, is equally pleasant and productive; but the level may be dispensed with, except in draining.

<sup>2</sup> By *aier* or *air* is to be understood whatever depends on temperature, weather, and exposure: by *layer*, whatever depends on soil, culture, and its concomitants.

<sup>3</sup> It is to be lamented, both on

account of the health and the finances of the poor, that they are so much attached, either to solid food, or to watery infusions of tea. Herbs, pulse, and roots, might often supersede more expensive articles of diet. Spoon-meat, in this part of the island at least, is in no high request at this period, though it appears to have been indispensable formerly. Tastes as well as manners are liable to change.

## March's Husbandry.

These having with peason, for pottage in Lent,  
Thou sparest both oatmeal, and bread to be spent.

- ¶ 27. Though never so much a good huswife doth care,  
That such as do labour, have husbandly fare ;  
Yet feed them and cram them, till purse do lack chink,  
No spoon-meat, no bellyfull, labourers think,

- Destroy pie, rooks, and ravens nests, &c. 28. Kill crow, pie, and cadow, rook, buzzard, and raven <sup>1</sup>,  
Or else go desire them to seek a new haven.  
In scaling the youngest, to pluck off his beek,  
Beware how ye clamber, for breaking your neck.

<sup>1</sup> In our moist climate, which naturally generates insects, if it were not for birds, and even some of those which are proscribed by vulgar prejudice, the fruits of the earth would be almost wholly destroyed. No doubt some species of the feathered tribes may become too numerous, if protected; but it is only during seed-time and harvest that birds do any injury; while their important services are continued the year round.

Were parishes to pay for the destruction of vipers, and of rats, it certainly would be more sensible and beneficial than setting a price on the heads of sparrows. As for rooks, they are of the first utility to the farmer; and even the crow and cadow, or jackdaw, are not destitute of valuable qualities, which may indeed be affirmed of the predaceous race, in general the least favoured of any.

*Thus endeth March's Husbandry.*

## ¶ APRIL'S ABSTRACT.



## CHAP. XXXVIII.

1. SOME champions lay,  
To fallow in May.
2. When tilth ploughs break,  
Poor cattle cries creak.
3. One day ere ye plow,  
Spread compas enow.
4. Some fodder buyeth,  
In fen where it lieth.
5. Thou champion wight,  
Have cow-meat for night.
6. Set hop his pole.  
Make deep the hole.
7. First, bark go and sell,  
Ere timber ye fell.
8. Fence coppice in,  
Ere hewers begin.
9. The straightest ye know,  
For staddles let grow.
10. Crab-tree preserve,  
For plough to serve.
11. Get timber out,  
Ere year go about.

## April's Abstract.

12. Some country lack plough-meat,  
And some do lack (b) cow-meat.
13. Small commons, and bare,  
Yield cattle ill fare.
14. Some common with geese,  
And sheep without fleece :  
Some tits thither bring,  
And hogs (c) without ring.
15. Some champions agree,  
As wasp doth with bee.
16. Get swineherd for hog,  
But kill not with dog.  
Where swineherd doth lack,  
Corn goeth to wrack.
17. All goes to the Devil,  
Where shepherd is evil.
18. Come home from land,  
With stone in hand.
19. Man cow provides,—  
Wife dairy guides.
20. Slut Cisley, untaught,  
Hath white meat naught.
21. Some bringeth in gains,  
Some loss beside pains.
22. Run, Ciss, fault known,  
With more than thine own.  
Such mistress, such Nan,  
Such master, such man.

*Thus endeth April's Abstract, agreeing with April's Husbandry.*

---

VARIATIONS.

(b) want.

(c) hops, *evidently a typographical error.*

## ¶ APRIL'S HUSBANDRY.

### CHAP. XXXIX.

Sweet April showers,  
Do spring May flowers.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. IN Cambridgeshire forward, to Lincolnshire way,  
The champion maketh his fallow in May <sup>1</sup> :  
Then thinking so doing, one tillage worth twain,  
By forcing of weed, by that means to refrain.
2. If April be dripping, then do I not hate <sup>2</sup>,  
(For him that hath little) his fallowing late ;  
Else otherwise, fallowing timely is best,  
For saving of cattle, of plough, and the rest.

<sup>1</sup> If early fallowing can be combined with the more essential operations of the farm, the practice is not to be discommended, both for the reason assigned—that of destroying weeds, and also for meliorating the soil, by exposure to the summer's sun. In the best managed districts, however, fallowing in enclosures is almost become obsolete.

<sup>2</sup> The seasons, if not allowed to direct will be sure to controul. It is therefore wisdom to yield to circumstances, and to avail oneself of every favourable opportunity of increasing the fertility of the soil, and saving the stock on the farm. A blind adherence to established rules is equally inimical to profit and improvement.

## April's Husbandry.

3. Be siür of plough to be ready at hand,  
Ere compas ye spread, that on hillocks did stand ;  
Lest drying, so lying, do make it decay <sup>1</sup>,  
Ere ever much water do wash it away.
4. Look now, to provide ye of meadow for hay <sup>2</sup>,  
If fens be undrowned, there cheapest ye may ;  
In fen for the bullock, for horse not so well,  
Count best, the best cheap, wheresoever ye dwell.
5. Provide ye of cow-meat, for cattle at night <sup>3</sup>,  
And chiefly where commons lie far out of sight ;  
Where cattle lie tied, without any meat,  
That profit by dairy, can never be great.
6. Get into thy hop-yard with plenty of poles,  
Among those same hillocks, divide them by doles.  
Three poles to a hillock (I pass not how long) <sup>4</sup>,  
Shall yield thee more profit, set deeply and strong.

Put poles to  
your hop-hills.

<sup>1</sup> Tusser seems to have understood the true principle of the fructifying quality of manures. Allow their salts to be washed away by the rains, or exhausted by the heat and drought, and you deprive them of their principal virtues.

<sup>2</sup> It is now time to lay up grass-lands, the nature of which is to be considered, in order that the produce may be suitably applied. Fen-land hay is apt to be rank and light, and therefore unfit for horses, though it will answer very well for sheep and cows, especially if a little mow-burnt or over-heated, which induces them to drink more freely. As for

musty hay, or what has been injured by stacking it when wet with rain, it is not relished by any kind of domestic animals.

<sup>3</sup> It is certainly too early in April for milch cows to provide for themselves, without the assistance of a little hay or other provender at night, and therefore the careful dairy-man will not neglect them.

<sup>4</sup> Hop-hills appear to be made larger than formerly, as three poles would not be half sufficient for one at present. But certainly the number of poles must always be in proportion to the number of plants on a hillock.

7. Sell bark to the tanner, ere timber ye fell <sup>1</sup>,  
Cut low by the ground, else do ye not well.  
In breaking save crooked, for mill and for ships ;  
And ever, in hewing, save carpenter's chips.

Felling of timber.

8. First see it well fenced, ere hewers begin <sup>2</sup>,  
Then see it well stadled, without and within.  
Thus being preserved, and husbandly done,  
Shall sooner raise profit, to thee or thy son.

9. Leave growing for stadles, the likest and best,  
Though seller and buyer dispatched the rest.  
In bushes, in hedge-row, in grove, and in wood,  
This lesson observed, is needful and good.

Stadling of woods.

<sup>1</sup> When bark was more plentiful, and tanners not so numerous, it probably was a piece of prudent advice, to make sure of a chapman for the bark, before the trees were cut down. At this period, however, there is no difficulty in selling any quantity at a good price; though from the modern improvements in tanning, less is used than formerly. Cutting trees low, so that no part of the but may be lost, is unquestionably proper; and it is always advisable to pay carpenters their fair wages, without any allowance of chips, which is a great temptation for them to waste timber.

<sup>2</sup> There are several obvious ad-

vantages attending the fencing of woodlands before felling. "To stadle woods," is to leave a sufficient number of thriving young trees, in order to replenish it; and a superabundance is to be recommended, which may be thinned as they increase in size. In a former note some remarks have been made on the management of woodlands. No branch of rural economy is more important to the individual, or to the public. If hedge-rows were properly managed, vast quantities of trees might be reared, with little waste of ground, as may be seen in the neighbourhood of the annotator.



## April's Husbandry.

10. Save elm, ash, and crab tree, for cart and for plough<sup>1</sup>,  
 Save step for a stile, of the crotch of the bough :  
 Save hazel for forks, save sallow for rake ;  
 Save hulver and thorn, thereof flail to make.

Discharge thy  
 woods.

11. Make riddance of carriage, ere year go about,  
 For spoiling of plant, that is newly come out<sup>2</sup>.  
 To carter (with oxen) this message I bring,—  
 Leave oxen abroad, for annoying the spring.
12. Allowance of fodder, some countries do yield,  
 As good for the cattle as hay in the field<sup>3</sup>.  
 Some mow up their headlands and plots among corn,  
 And driven to leave nothing, unmown or unshorn.
13. Some commons are barren, the nature is such,  
 And some overlayeth the commons (*b*) too much.

---

 VARIATION.

(*b*) common.

---

<sup>1</sup> The kinds of trees here enumerated are still applied to the same purposes ; and independent of long established prejudice they have certainly utility to recommend them.

<sup>2</sup> Cattle are very fond of the young buds of trees ; and therefore are to be kept out of woodlands in the spring.

<sup>3</sup> Some of the more common artificial grasses were probably introduced into England at this period ;

yet certain it is, that as late as the reign of Charles I. meadow land was let at a much higher proportionable rent than now, from the scarcity of hay. Besides the clovers and ryegrass, nonsuch and saintfoin are extremely valuable to the modern farmer : the first is excellently adapted for light sands, and the latter thrives prodigiously, in a dry limestone soil.

The pestered commons, small profit doth give <sup>1</sup>,  
And profit as little some reap, I believe.

14. Some pester the commons with jades and with geese,  
With hog without ring, and with sheep without fleece :  
Some lose a day's labour with seeking their own,  
Some meet with a booty, they would not have known.
15. Great troubles and losses the champion sees <sup>2</sup>,  
And ever in brawling, as wasps among bees :  
As charity that way appeareth but small ;  
So less be their winnings, or nothing at all.
16. Where champion wanteth a swine-herd for hog,  
There many complaineth of naughty man's dog.  
Where each his own keeper appoints without care,  
There corn is destroyed, ere men be aware.

---

\* The right of commons, though pertinaciously insisted on by those who possess claims, is nevertheless of little comparative value, especially to the poor. That lazy industry, that beggarly independence, which are created by the miserable stock which the poor man can command, and which is generally seen on commons, are as injurious to himself as to the community. The prevalence of enclosures, to which the good sense of our author rendered him partial, though the age in which he lived was not ripe for such an

improvement, as may be learnt from the commotions excited about that period, has diminished the evils of the common-field system ; but till every acre of ground is in severalty, AGRICULTURE cannot be said to have reached beyond the first stage towards perfection.

<sup>2</sup> All the evils and inconveniencies here enumerated are still felt by the *champion* farmer. But every person's own experience and observation will confirm the truth of this remark.

17. The land is well hearted, with help of the fold <sup>1</sup>,  
 For one or two crops, if so long it will hold.  
 If shepherd would keep them from stroying of corn,  
 The walk of his sheep might the better be borne.
18. Where stones be too many, annoying thy land <sup>2</sup>,  
 Make servant come home, with a stone in his hand :  
 By daily so doing, have plenty ye shall,  
 Both handsome for paving, and good for a wall.

¶  
 Dairy matters.

19. From April beginning, till Andrew be past <sup>3</sup>,  
 So long with good huswife her dairy doth last ;  
 Good milch-cow and pasture, good husbands provide,  
 The res'due, good huswives know (*b*) best how to  
 guide.

---

VARIATION.

(*b*) knows.

<sup>1</sup> The manuring of land by means of the fold, is an ancient and highly beneficial practice, especially where the lands lie at a distance from the farm.

<sup>2</sup> No doubt some fields are too much covered with stones, and by removing a few of the larger ones daily, the evil will gradually disappear ; but if the soil is light, the land must not be wholly cleared from the smaller ones, or vegetation will be destroyed, either by the weeds or want of moisture.

<sup>3</sup> Where our author resided as a

farmer, that is in Essex and Suffolk, the business of the dairy is still successfully conducted, and perfectly understood. Neither the breed of the cattle, however, nor the nature of the soil, can wholly account for the superiority of the butter and cheese of some districts over others : much depends on management ; for under the most opposite circumstances of soil and situation, I have seen the same results. Cleanliness, skill, and attention, are necessary to success in dairying. Andrew, or St. Andrew's day, is November 30.

20. Ill huswife, unskilfull, to make her own cheese,  
Through trusting of others, hath this for her fees :  
Her milk-pan and cream-pot, so slabber'd and sost,  
That butter is wanting, and cheese is half lost.

¶  
Ill huswifery.

21. Where some of a cow, do raise yearly a pound <sup>1</sup>,  
With such seely huswives, no penny is found.  
Then dairy-maid Cisley, her fault being known,  
Away, apace, trudgeth, with more than her own.

¶

22. Then neighbour, for God's sake, if any you see,  
Good servant for dairy-house, waine (a) her to me.  
Such master such man, and such mistress such maid,  
Such husband and huswife, such houses arraid (a).

¶  
Ill huswives  
sayings.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) waynes.

(a) " and house is araid."

---

<sup>1</sup> Without vigilance in the mistress, and integrity and diligence in the dairy-maid, it is idle to look for profit. Indeed, the importance of good servants is so great, and the mischief attending bad ones is so visible, that too much pains cannot be taken in

selection. It should be observed, however, that the character of the master or mistress generally influences that of the servants :

Such mistress, such Nau,  
Such master, such man.

# A LESSON FOR DAIRY-MAID CISLEY, OF TEN TOPPING GUESTS.

As wife that will,  
Good husband please,  
Must shun with skill,  
Such guests as these :

So Ciss that serves,  
Must mark this note,  
What fault deserves  
A brushed coat.

¶  
Ten topping  
guests unsent  
for.

Gehazi, Lot's wife, and Argus his eyes,  
Tom Piper, poor cobbler, and Lazarus' thighs :  
Rough Esau, with Maudlin, and gentils that scrawl,  
With bishop that burneth, thus know ye them all.

These toppingly guests be in number but ten,  
As welcome in dairy as bears among men ;  
Which being descried, take heed of ye shall,  
For danger of after claps, after that fall.

¶  
White and  
dry.

1. Gehazi his sickness was whitish and dry<sup>1</sup>,  
Such cheeses, good Cisley, ye floted too nigh.

## VARIATION.

(a) " With bishop that turneth, and burneth up all."

<sup>1</sup> The ten topping, but certainly unwelcome guests in cheese, which are here enumerated, may require some distinctive explanations, though they are certainly not ill discriminated from one another. The leprosy of Gehazi is compared to

cheese made of milk too much floted or skimmed, and in those parts of the kingdom more especially, where much butter is made, this fault is too common. Skim-milk cheese, however, might be advantageously mixed with seeds, as is the practice in Holland.

- |                                                                                                                      |                |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|
| 2. Leave Lot with her pillar, good Cisley, alone <sup>1</sup> ,<br>Much saltness in white-meat is ill for the stone. | Too salt.      |
| 3. If cheeses in dairy have Argus's eyes <sup>2</sup> ,<br>Tell Cisley the fault in her huswifery lies.              | Full of eyes.  |
| 4. Tom Piper hath hoven and puffed up cheeks <sup>3</sup> ,<br>If cheese be so hoven, make Ciss to seek creeks.      | Hoven.         |
| 5. Poor cobbler he tuggeth his leatherly trash <sup>4</sup> ;<br>If cheese abide tugging, tug Cisley a crash.        | Tough.         |
| 6. If lazarus so loathsome, in cheese be espied <sup>5</sup> ,<br>Let baies amend Cisley, or shift her aside.        | Full of spots. |
| 7. Rough Esau was hairy, from top to the foot <sup>6</sup> ,<br>If cheese so appeareth, call Cisley a slut.          | Full of hairs. |
| 8. As Maudlin wept, so would Cisley be drest <sup>7</sup> ,<br>For whey in her cheeses not half enough prest.        | Full of whey.  |

<sup>1</sup> Since the duty on salt has been made so heavy, it is seldom that we have occasion to blame the dairy-maid for reminding us of Lot's wife.

<sup>2</sup> If cheeses are full of eyes, it is a proof that the curd was not properly worked.

<sup>3</sup> Hoven cheese is occasioned by negligence in breaking the curd; and therefore Cisley deserves to be driven to creeks, or holes and corners, for her idleness and inattention.

<sup>4</sup> Tough, or leathery cheese, may arise from its being set too hot, or not worked up and the curd broke in proper time. Much nicety is re-

quired in the operations of the dairy; and good management in this department must be the result of cleanliness, judgment, and activity.

<sup>5</sup> Various causes may bring on corruption in cheese, such as the use of beastings, or milk immediately after calving, moisture, bruises, and such like.

<sup>6</sup> Hairs in cheese can only arise from inexcusable filthiness, or from Cisley's combing and decking herself in the dairy.

<sup>7</sup> Mary Magdalen is introduced to express curds ill separated from the whey, whether by pressure or by previous working.



## April's Husbandry.

Full of gentils. 9. If gentils be scrawling, call maggot the pye <sup>1</sup>,  
If cheeses have gentils, at Ciss by and by.

Burnt to the pan. 10. Bless Cisley, (good mistress,) that bishop doth ban <sup>2</sup>,  
For burning the milk of her cheese to the pan.

If thou, so oft beaten,  
Amendest by this,  
I will no more threaten,  
I promise thee, Ciss.

Thus dairy-maid, Cisley, rehearsed ye see,  
What faults with ill \* huswife in dairy-house be :  
Of market abhorred, to houshold a grief,  
To master and mistress, as ill as a thief.

*Thus endeth April's Husbandry.*

<sup>1</sup> Gentils may arise from too much moisture, from warmth, or from fly-blows. It is the business of the dairy-maid to guard against every circumstance that can injure her trust. Cheese full of gentils are deemed to be fit only for the magpie.

<sup>2</sup> Cisley in running after the bishop in passing, as was the practice in former times, in order to obtain his blessing, might accidentally leave her milk on the fire ; and on her

return, finding it burnt to the pan, might probably curse the prelate for her mishap ; which conduct deserved correction, or a left-handed blessing from her mistress. It is evident from various passages in Tusser, that masters and mistresses corrected their servants, as they would their children, without the danger of a prosecution for an assault, which it is probable they would now experience.

\* The later editions read *good*, evidently wrong.



# ¶ MAY'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XL.

1. PUT lamb from ewe,  
To milk a few.
2. Be not too bold,  
To milk, and to fold.
3. Five ewes allow,  
To every cow.
4. Sheep wriggling tail,  
Hath mads without fail.
5. Beat hard in the reed,  
Where house hath need.
6. Leave cropping from May,  
To Michaelmas-day.  
Let ivy be killed,  
Else tree will be spilled.
7. Now threshers warn,  
To rid the barn.
8. Be sure of hay  
Till th' end of May.
9. Let sheep fill flank,  
Where corn is too rank.  
In woodland lever,  
In champion never.
10. To weeding away,  
As soon as ye may.

## May's Abstract.

11. For corn, here reed,  
What naughty weed.
12. Who weeding slacketh,  
Good husbandry lacketh.
13. Sow buck or brank,  
That smells so rank.
14. Thy brank go and sow,  
Where barley did grow :  
The next crop wheat,  
Is husbandry neat.
15. Sow peascods some,  
For harvest to come.
16. Sow hemp and flax,  
That spinning lacks.
17. Teach hop to climb,  
For now it is time.
18. Through fowls and weeds  
Poor hop ill speeds.  
Cut off or crop  
Superfluous hop.  
The titters or tine,  
Makes hop to pine.
19. Some raketh their wheat,  
With rake that is great :  
So titters and tine,  
Be gotten out fine.
20. Now sets do crave,  
Some weeding to have.
21. Now drain as ye like,  
Both fen and dike.
22. Watch bees in May  
For swarming away :

- Both now and in June,  
Mark master bee's tune.
23. Twifallow thy land,  
Lest plough else stand.
24. No longer tarry  
Out compas to carry
25. Where need doth pray it,  
See there ye lay it.
26. Set Jack and Joan,  
To gather up stone.
27. To grass with thy (a) calves,  
Take nothing to halves.
28. Be sure thy neat,  
Have water and meat.
29. By tainting of ground,  
Destruction is found.
30. Now carriage get,  
Home fuel to fet.  
Tell faggot and billet  
For filching gillet.
31. In summer for firing  
Let city be buying.  
Mark collier's packing,  
Lest coals be lacking.  
(See opened sack)  
For two in a pack.
32. Let nodding patch,  
Go sleep a snatch.
33. Wife as you will,  
Now ply your still.

---

VARIATION.

(a) wants *thy*.

## May's Abstract.

34. Fine basil sow,  
     In a pot to grow.  
     Fine seeds sow now,  
     Before ye saw how.
35. Keep ox from cow,  
     For causes enow.

*Thus endeth May's Abstract, agreeing with May's  
 Husbandry.*

### ¶ TWO OTHER SHORT REMEMBRANCES.

|                            |   |                  |
|----------------------------|---|------------------|
| From bull, cow fast,       | } | St. Helen's day. |
| Till Crouchmas be past :   |   |                  |
| From heifer, bull hid thee | } | August.          |
| Till Lammas bid thee.      |   |                  |

*Here ends May's short Remembrances.*

---

# ¶ MAY'S HUSBANDRY.

## CHAP. XLI.

Cold May and windy,  
Barn filleth up finely.

Forgotten month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. At Philip and Jacob, away with the lambs <sup>1</sup>,  
That thinkest to have any milk of their dams :  
At Lammass leave milking, for fear of a thing,  
Lest (*requiem æternam*) in winter they sing.

Essex and  
Suffolk.

2. To milk and to fold them, is much to require <sup>2</sup>,  
Except ye have pasture to fill their desire :  
Yet many by milking (such heed they do take :)  
Not hurting their bodies, much profit do make.

Milking of  
ewes.

---

<sup>1</sup> When flocks were more uniform as to breed and management, lambs used to be separated from their dams about St. Philip and St. James's day, May 1, for the purpose of tithing as well as milking. In regard to tithing, no specific day can now be fixed; and as for milking ewes after the lambs are weaned, the practice is become almost obsolete. While it existed, no doubt

it was prudent to warn against the consequences of continuing it too late in the season, lest the ewes should thereby be weakened, and rendered incapable of supporting the severity of the winter.

<sup>2</sup> It appears that sheep were not only milked but folded at the same time by avaricious farmers, who even refused a proper supply of food.

## May's Husbandry.

3. Five ewes to a cow, make a (c) proof by a score <sup>1</sup>,  
 Shall double thy dairy, or trust me no more :  
 Yet may a good huswife that knoweth the skill,  
 Have mixt or unmixt, at her pleasure and will.
  
4. If sheep or thy lamb fall a wriggling with tail <sup>2</sup>,  
 Go, by and by, search it, whiles help may prevail :  
 That barberly handled, I dare thee assure ;  
 Cast dust in his a—se, thou hast finish'd thy cure.
  
5. Where houses be reeded (as houses have need) <sup>3</sup>,  
 Now pare off the moss, and go beat in the reed :  
 The juster ye drive it, the smother and plain,  
 More handsome ye make it, to shut off the rain.

---

### VARIATION.

(c) wants *α*.

---

<sup>1</sup> If five ewes are equal to a cow, it is surprising that their milk has not kept its place in the dairy, as it certainly requires more land to subsist one cow than five sheep.

<sup>2</sup> Maggots are very apt to annoy sheep, which the careful shepherd may discover by infallible signs.

"To handle barberly," is *secundum artem*, or as a barber-surgeon would do, by first cutting away extraneous

substances, and then rubbing the part with dust. If the maggot, however, has eaten his way deep into the flesh, a more powerful application than dust is required.

<sup>3</sup> Reeds are infinitely superior to thatch for covering houses ; and at this season of the year are to be smoothed and freed from moss. In Norfolk and Suffolk, reeding is said to be well understood.

6. From May till October, leave cropping, for why<sup>1</sup> ?      Leave off cropping.  
     In woodse, whatever thou croppest will die ;  
     Where ivy embraceth the tree very sore,      Destroy ivy.  
     Kill ivy, or else tree will addle no more.
  
7. Keep threshing for thresher till May be come in<sup>2</sup>,  
     To have to be suer fresh chaff in thy bin ;  
     And somewhat to scramble, for hog and for hen,  
     And work, when it raineth, for loitering men.
  
8. Be suer of hay, and of provender some<sup>3</sup>,      Count store  
     For labouring cattle, till pasture be come.      no sore.  
     And if ye do mind, to have nothing to sterve,  
     Have one thing or other, for all things to serve.
  
9. Ground compassed well, and a following year<sup>4</sup>,  
     (If wheat or thy barley, too rank do appear ;)  
     Now eat it with sheep, or else mow it ye may,  
     For ledging, and so, to the birds for a prey.

<sup>1</sup> During the summer season, hollow and decayed pollards in particular, or woodse, cannot be lopped without danger. Ivy, however, is to be removed ; or it will, by the closeness of its embraces, prevent trees from addling, that is, growing or increasing in size.

<sup>2</sup> The economy of the barn is likely to undergo a complete revolution, by the introduction of threshing machines. They are, however, little friendly to fresh straw and chaff, from their executing much work in a short time ; but their ad-

vantages on farms of any magnitude far counterbalance any partial inconveniencies.

<sup>3</sup> As summer food is not yet to be depended on, it will be necessary to have a supply of hay and other provender, till the grass is sufficiently forward to maintain the stock.

<sup>4</sup> Eating down wheat by sheep, when too rank, is seldom necessary, except on very rich soils, and then great care is required that it be not too far advanced towards earing. Mowing is very rarely practised under any circumstances.



¶  
Weeding.

10. In May get a weed-hook, a crotch and a glove<sup>1</sup>,  
And weed out such weeds, as the corn doth not love.  
For weeding of winter corn, now it is best ;  
But June is the better for weeding the rest.

Ill weeds.

11. The May-weed doth burn, and the thistle doth fret ;  
The fitches pull downward both rye and the wheat :  
The brake and the cockle, be noisome too much ;  
Yet like unto boodle, no weed there is such.

¶

12. Slack never thy weeding, for dearth (a) nor for cheap,  
The corn shall reward it, ere ever ye reap ;  
And specially where ye do trust for to seed,  
Let that be well used, the better to speed.

Sowing of  
brank.

13. In May is good sowing thy buck or thy brank<sup>2</sup>,  
That black is as pepper, and smelleth as rank :

#### VARIATION.

(a) dear.

<sup>1</sup> Weeding of winter-corn certainly should not be delayed longer than this month, though the lenten crops may be cleared during June. It is evident that the weeding-hook and the crotch (a crooked two-clawed instrument for extracting roots,) were not unknown among our early agriculturists. It is, however, to be remarked, that weeding is still less regarded in most counties than its importance deserves. Tusser appears to have entertained very just notions on this subject ; and

after enumerating some of the most frequent and noxious plants in corn, points out the advantages of extirpating them, whether a good crop, a good sample, or future seed, is to be regarded.

<sup>2</sup> Though buckwheat, *polygonum fagopyrum*, is still partially used for the purpose of feeding poultry and sometimes pigs, and has been recommended, as if it were a new discovery, to be ploughed in for a manure in poor and distant soils, it is evident from various passages of this

It is to thy land, as a comfort or muck,  
And all thing it maketh, as fat as a buok.

14. Sow buck after barley, or after thy wheat,  
A peck to the rood, (if the measure be great.)  
Three earths see ye give it, and sow it above;  
And harrow it finely, if buck ye do love.
  
15. Who peasecods would gather, to have with the last <sup>1</sup>,  
To serve for his household, till harvest be past,  
Must sow them in May, in a corner ye shall,  
Where through so late growing, no hindrance may  
fall.
  
16. Good flax and good hemp, to have of her own <sup>2</sup>,  
In May a good huswife will see it be sown;  
And afterwards trim it, to serve at a need,  
The fimble to spin, and the carl for her seed.
  
17. Get into thy (*b*) hop-yard, for now it is time <sup>3</sup>,  
To teach Robin Hop, on his pole how to climb:

¶  
Sowing of flax  
and hemp.

---

## VARIATION.

(*b*) the.

book, that its value was formerly known and appreciated for both purposes, to an extent of which we can now have scarcely any idea. It is, however, a tender plant, and must be sown late.

<sup>1</sup> Late pease may well be dispensed with, since French beans and potatoes have been so generally and successfully cultivated.

<sup>2</sup> The subject of hemp has already been noticed in some preceding ob-

servations. This is the proper month to sow it in; and to ensure a good crop, the soil should not only be rich, but it should be kept clean, during its growth.

<sup>3</sup> At this season of the year, hop-grounds ought to be duly attended to; because the plants begin to run freely, and are exposed to various annoyances from the weather, birds, and weeds.

To follow the sun, as his property is,  
And weed him and trim him, if aught go amiss.

Ill neighbours to the hop. 18. Grass, thistle, and mustard-seed, hemlock, and bur,  
Tine, mallow, and nettle, that keep such a stur;  
With peacock and turkey, that nibble off top,  
Are very ill neighbours, to seely poor hop.

19. From wheat, go and rake out the titters or tine<sup>1</sup>,  
If ear be not forth, it will rise again fine:  
Use now in thy rye, little raking or none,  
Break tine (*b*) from his root, and so let it alone.

Weeding of quickset. 20. Banks newly quicksetted, some weeding do crave<sup>2</sup>,  
The kindlier nourishment thereby to have;  
Then after a shower, to weeding a snatch,  
More easily weed, with the root to dispatch.

Now drain ditches. 21. The fen and the quagmire, so marish be kind<sup>3</sup>,  
And are to be drained, now win to thy mind;  
Which yearly undrained, and suffered, uncut,  
Annoyeth the meadows, that thereon do 'but.

---

VARIATION.

(*b*) time, probably a typographical error.

---

<sup>1</sup> The tine tare is now seldom attempted to be raked out, for fear of greater mischief from the practice than from its neglect. The safest way is certainly to cut the tine near the root, but the operation is extremely tedious.

<sup>2</sup> If quicksets are not carefully weeded, their growth will be sensibly retarded, and frequent blanks will be found in the tables.

<sup>3</sup> It is adviseable to finish draining before this season; but better late, than not at all.

22. Take heed to thy bees, that are ready to swarm<sup>1</sup>,  
The loss thereof now, is a crown's worth of harm ;  
Let skilfull be ready, and diligence seen,  
Lest being too careless, thou lovest thy been.

¶  
Swarming of  
bees.

23. In May, at the furthest, twifallow thy land<sup>2</sup>,  
Much drought may else after cause plough for to  
stand :  
This tilth being done, ye have passed the worst ;  
Then after who ploweth, plow thou with the first.

Twifallowing.

24. Twifallow once ended, get tumbrell and man,  
And compas that fallow, as soon as ye can.  
Let skilfull bestow it, where need is upon ;  
More profit the sooner, to follow thereon<sup>3</sup>.

Carry out  
compas.

<sup>1</sup> Bees begin to swarm in May, and require attention during gleams of sun-shine, between the hours of ten and three. Usually, the hives give some indication of their swarming, which should not be neglected. The old proverb says, " a swarm in May is worth a load of hay." If the loss of a swarm, however, was the loss of a crown in the sixteenth century, it appears that bees were then of greater proportional value than at present. Few swarms will fetch more than 15s. at this time ; yet in every point of view they are a productive stock to a poor man, because they cost nothing but a little care and trouble. The custom of entertaining bees with the rough music of

the key, the warming-pan, or the fire-shovel, in order to make them settle, has probably little effect ; except as far as it ascertains property, by giving notice to the neighbours that a swarm is in the air, which may be claimed wherever it alights.

<sup>2</sup> The dry weather generally sets in during this month, and the fallowing of land becomes of course more laborious ; or if neglected, the weeds are gaining the ascendancy and exhausting the soil.

<sup>3</sup> Though all the standard editions read *follow*, it seems to be the meaning of the author, " more profit the sooner to *follow* thereon."

## May's Husbandry.

25. Hide headlands with muck, if ye will, to the knees <sup>1</sup>,  
So dripped and shadow'd, with bushes and trees :  
Bare plots full of galls, if ye plow overthwart,  
And compas it then, is a husbandly part.

26. Let children be hired to lay to their bones <sup>2</sup>,  
From fallow, as needeth, to gather up stones.  
What wisdom for profit adviseth unto,  
That,—husband and huswife must willingly do.

Forth to grass with thy calves. 27. To grass with thy calves, in some meadow-plot near <sup>3</sup>,  
Where neither their mothers may see them, nor hear :  
Where water is plenty, and barth to sit warm,  
And look well unto them, for taking of harm.

Let not cattle want water. 28. Pinch never thy wennels of water or meat <sup>4</sup>,  
If ever ye hope to have them good neat.

<sup>1</sup> The meaning is, “ make your dunghill on the headland, especially where shaded with bushes and trees, as they will prevent the moisture from exhaling.”

<sup>2</sup> Tusser is always recommending early industry; and nothing can be more beneficial to the individual or the public. If children are not habituated to work, as soon as their strength will permit, labour will become irksome, and they will shun it as a task. The moral and religious education of the children of the poor may be carried on, at the same time that they are contributing to their own support, and the assistance of their parents. Under a

proper system, the education, even of the learned, need not occupy half the space generally allotted to it.

<sup>3</sup> To remove young animals out of the hearing of their dams, and to allow them plenty of water and shelter, are not only conducive to their comfort, but also to their improvement.

<sup>4</sup> Wennels, or weaned calves, if denied a proper quantity of food and water, can never be expected to make “ good neats;” and if the land is overstocked in summer, you may, perhaps, be obliged to assist your cattle to rise in winter; or, in other words, “ to lift at their tails.”



In summer-time, daily ; in winter, in frost,  
If cattle lack drink, they be utterly lost.

29. For coveting much, overlay not thy ground,  
And then shall thy cattle be lusty and sound ;  
But pinch them of pasture, while summer doth last,  
And lift at their tails, ere a (a b) winter be past.

Overlay not  
thy pastures.

30. Get home with thy fuel, make ready to fet<sup>1</sup>,  
The sooner the easier, carriage to get :  
Or otherwise linger the carriage thereon,  
Till (where as ye left it) a quarter be gone.

Get home thy  
fuel.

31. His firing, in summer, let citizen buy,  
Lest buying, in winter, make purse for to cry :  
For carman and collier harp both on a string,  
In winter they cast, to be with thee to bring.

Husbandry  
for citizens.

32. From May to mid August, an hōur or two<sup>2</sup>,  
Let Patch sleep a snatch, howsoever ye do :  
Though sleeping one hōur refresheth his song,  
Yet trust not Hob Grouthead, for sleeping too long.

Sleeping-time.

## VARIATION.

(a b) an.

<sup>1</sup> When fuel used to be supplied from the woods and the copses, which of course were cut in winter, by this season it was sufficiently dry, and its carriage did not interfere with more important avocations. But even where coals were used, it was prudent to lay them in early,

before the demand encreased, and the supply became diminished.

<sup>2</sup> It appears to have been the custom formerly, to allow, in warm weather, sleep for an hour or two. In Norfolk, we are told, the practice is not quite obsolete on churning days, when the mistress and

¶  
Stillling of  
herbs.

33. The knowledge of stilling is one pretty feat <sup>1</sup>,  
The waters be wholesome, the charges not great :  
What timely thou gettest, while summer doth last,  
Think winter will help thee, to spend it as fast.
- ¶ 34. Fine basil desireth it may be her lot <sup>2</sup>,  
To grow as the gilliflower, trim in a pot ;  
That ladies and gentles (*b c*), to whom ye do serve,  
May help her, as needeth, poor life to preserve.
35. Keep ox fro thy cow, that to profit would go,  
Lest cow be deceived, by ox doing so ;  
And thou recompensed, for suffering the same,  
With want of a calf, and a cow to wax lame.

*Thus endeth May's Husbandry.*

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) gentils.

---

maids get up early ; and likewise among the ploughmen, where two journies a-day are performed with their teams, and an interval allowed for rest.

<sup>1</sup> Stillling, or distilling, may be a "pretty feat," but we doubt if it is very profitable, and if it does not furnish a temptation to dram-drink-

ing, under the mask of simple and medicinal waters.

<sup>2</sup> Garden basil, if stroked, leaves a grateful smell on the hand ; and, as a compliment, our author insinuates that it receives fresh life from being touched by a fair lady. It is now seldom cultivated, as its fancied virtues are in no repute.

---



## ¶ JUNE'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XLII.

1. WASH sheep for to shear,  
That sheep may go bare.
2. Though fleece ye take,  
No patches make.
3. Shear lambs no whit,  
Or shear not yet.
4. If meadow be grown,  
Let meadow be mown.
5. Plough early ye may,  
And then carry hay.
6. 'Tis good to be known,  
To have all of thy own.  
Who goeth a borrowing,  
Goeth a sorrowing.
7. See cart in plight,  
And all things right.
8. Make dry over-head,  
Both hovel and shed.
9. Of hovel make stack,  
For pease on his back,
10. In champion some,  
Wants elbow room.

*June's Abstract.*

11. Let wheat and rye,  
In house lie dry.
12. Buy turf and sedge,  
Or else break hedge.
13. Good store-house, needfull,  
Well order'd, speedfull.
14. Thy barns repair,  
Make floor fair.
15. Such shrubs as noy,  
In summer destroy.
16. Swinge brambles and brakes,  
Get forks and rakes.
17. Spare headlands some,  
Till harvest come.
18. Cast ditch and pond,  
To lay upon lond.

*A Lesson of Hop-yard.*

19. Where hops will grow,  
Here learn to know :  
Hops many will come,  
In a rood of room.
20. Hops hate the land,  
With gravel and sand.
21. The rotten mould,  
For hop is worth gold.
22. The sun south-west,  
For hop-yard is best.
23. Hop-plot once found,  
Now dig the ground.

24. Hops favoureth malt,  
Hops, thrift doth exalt.  
Of hops more read,  
As time shall need.

*Thus endeth June's Abstract, agreeing with June's  
Husbandry.*

## ¶ JUNE'S HUSBANDRY.

### CHAP. XLIII.

Calm weather in June,  
Corn sets in tune.

Forgotten, month past,  
Do now at the last.

1. Wash sheep (for the better,) where water doth run <sup>1</sup>, <sup>Sheep-shear-</sup>  
And let him go cleanly, and dry in the sun : <sup>ing.</sup>  
Then shear him, and spare not, at two days an end,  
The sooner the better, his corps will amend.

<sup>1</sup> As this is the season for sheep-shearing, they must previously be washed; and a running stream is undoubtedly best, if not too rapid. After washing, care should be taken to drive the sheep to a dry pasture. If possible, shearing should be performed in fine weather; or the sheep should be housed; or put into a warm bath at least, and fed for a day or two, if it is rainy or cold. Shearing should be done with great

attention, lest the animal should be wounded in stripping it of its fleece. The Agricultural Society of Berks, a county in which farming in all its branches is well understood, propose premiums for neat and expeditious shearing; and it is astonishing with what quickness and precision this operation is performed by the candidates. Where the skin is injured, a plaster of tar, will prevent fly-blows.

Beware of evil  
sheep shearers.

2. Reward not thy sheep, when ye take off his coat,  
With twitches and patches as broad as a groat;  
Let not such ungentleness happen to thine,  
Lest fly with her gentils, do make it to pine.

Shear lambs  
in July.

3. Let lambs go unclipped, till June be half worn<sup>1</sup>,  
The better (a) the fleeces will grow to be shorn:  
The Pye will discharge thee for pulling the rest;  
The lighter the sheep is, then feedeth it best.

Mowing-time.

4. If meadow be forward, be mowing of some<sup>2</sup>,  
But mow as the makers may well overcome.  
Take heed to the weather, the wind, and the sky,  
If danger approacheth, then cock apace, cry.

5. Plough early till ten a'clock, then to thy hay<sup>3</sup>,  
In plowing and carting, so profit ye may.  
By little and little thus doing ye win,  
That plough shall not hinder, when harvest comes in.

---

VARIATION.

(a) their.

---

<sup>1</sup> Sheep of the second season are probably here referred to. They are still more tender than those that are considered as full grown, and ought to be shorn when the weather is settled warm. Yet it is no advantage to sheep to bear their fleece too long; on the contrary, they will thrive best, and be most protected from annoyances of every kind, when they are light and active, provided the weather is not too inclement at the time of shearing.

<sup>2</sup> The advice intended to be given is,—mow as soon as the grass is ready, and the weather promises to be settled; but not too much at once, lest part of it be spoiled for want of hands. And, if the atmosphere or the barometer, a more modern, but a very useful invention, should indicate rain, secure what you can in cocks.

<sup>3</sup> To employ your labourers in ploughing, or in performing other parts of husbandry, till the dew is

6. Provide of thine own, to have all things at hand <sup>1</sup>.  
Lest work and the workman, unoccupied, stand :  
Love seldom to borrow, that thinkest to save,  
For he that once lendeth, twice looketh to have.
7. Let cart be well searched, without and within <sup>2</sup>,  
Well clouted and greased, ere hay time begin :  
Thy hay being carried, though carter had sworn,  
Cart's bottom (c), well boarded, is saving of corn.
8. Good husbands that lay, to save all things upright,  
For tumbrels and cart have a shed ready dight ;  
Where under, the hog may in winter lie warm ;  
To stand so inclosed, as wind do no harm.
9. So likewise a hovell will serve for a room,  
To stack on the peason, when harvest shall come ;  
And serve thee in winter moreover than that,  
To shut up thy porklings, thou mindest to fat.

Trim well thy  
carts.

A hovell to set  
upon crotches,  
and covered  
with poles and  
straw.

## VARIATION.

(c) border.

off the grass, is unquestionably a saving of time, and essentially forwards the business of the farm.

<sup>1</sup> To keep a proper store of implements is not only economical but prudent. He who is always borrowing what he ought to have of his own, is laying himself under obligations which he will find it difficult to repay.

<sup>2</sup> Before carts and waggons are absolutely wanted ; and the same

may be said of other implements of husbandry, it is adviseable to get them all into proper repair. The closer the bed of the waggon, the less corn will be lost in carriage. And to have a shed where carriages may be protected from the rain, and the hog, and perhaps the poultry, find shelter during the severity of winter, is adviseable on every principle.

## June's Husbandry.

10. Some barn-room have little, and yard-room as much (a)<sup>1</sup>.

Yet corn in the field appertaineth to such :  
Then hovells or ricks they are forced to make,  
Abroad or at home, for necessity's sake.

11. Make suer of bread-corn (of all other grain), (a)  
Lie dry and well look'd to, for mouse and for rain ;  
Though fitches and pease, and such other as they,  
(For pestering too much) on a hovell ye lay.

12. With whins or with furzes, thy hovell renew (a)<sup>2</sup>,  
For turf and for sedge, for to bake and to brew ;  
For charcoal and sea-coal, and also for thack,  
For tall-wood and billet, as yearly ye lack.

---

VARIATION.

(a) Stanzas 10, 11, 12, not in this edition.

---

<sup>1</sup> A number of buildings on a farm, are expensive to the landlord, and frequently of little benefit to the tenant ; and least of all is much barn room wanted, though a general object of request, provided such appendages are properly placed, for threshing from the rick-yard. As for stacking barley and oats in barns in an unthreshed state, it is only exposing it to vermin, damp, and mustiness.

<sup>2</sup> Hovels covered with light fire wood, as it is called, which is in constant use, must be annually renewed. Such temporary erections, if it were not for the danger of fire, have many things to recommend them, as they are extremely cheap, and furnish shelter for cattle, and protection from the weather, to whatever is placed under them.



13. What husbandly husbands, except they be fools <sup>1</sup>,  
But handsome have store-house, for trinkets and tools? <sup>The husband-ly storehouse.</sup>  
And all in good order, fast locked to lie,  
Whatever is needful, to find by and by.
14. Thy houses and barns would be looked upon,  
And all things amended, ere harvest come on :  
Things thus set in order, in quiet and rest,  
Shall further thy harvest, and pleasure thee best.
15. The bushes and thorn, with the shrubs that do noy <sup>2</sup>,  
In woodsere or summer, cut down to destroy :  
But whereas decay, to the tree ye will none,  
For danger in woodsere, let hacking alone.
16. At midsummer, down with the brambles and brakes <sup>3</sup>,  
And after, abroad, with thy forks and thy rakes. <sup>Mow down brakes and meadows.</sup>  
Set mowers a mowing, where meadow is grown,  
The longer now standing, the worse to be mown.

Neatness, care, and method in arrangement, are strongly to be recommended; not only in preserving farming implements, but in every thing else connected with rural affairs or domestic œconomy. The repair of buildings should never be deferred till the approach of harvest, not only on account of that busy scene, but also because the days are declining in length.

<sup>2</sup> The proper season for felling of

wood, or woodsere, is particularly to be regarded. In June, whatever you mean to destroy may be cut or grubbed up. If you wish to save your woods, do not meddle with them in summer.

<sup>3</sup> There is a proper time for all things; and when any particular vegetable production has reached maturity, it cannot be too early secured from deterioration.



Mow headlands at harvest, or after, in the severall fields.

17. Now down with the grass upon headlands about,  
That groweth in shadow, so rank and so stout ;  
But grass upon headlands of barley and pease,  
When harvest is ended, go mow if ye please.
18. Such muddy deep ditches, and pits in the field <sup>1</sup>,  
That all a dry summer no water will yield ;  
By fieing and casting that mud upon heaps,  
Commodities many the husbandman reaps.

A LESSON WHERE AND WHEN TO PLANT GOOD  
HOP YARD <sup>2</sup>.

19. Whom fancy perswadeth, among other crops,  
To have for his spending sufficient of hops ;  
Must willingly follow, of choices to chuse,  
Such lessons approved as skilfull do use.

Naught for  
hops.

20. Ground gravelly, sandy, and mixed with clay,  
Is naughty for hops, any manner of way ;

<sup>1</sup> To fey a ditch or pond is to empty and clean it; and the mud taken from such places, if mixed with lime or chalk, forms an excellent compost for pasture-grounds.

<sup>2</sup> It has already been remarked, that hops, though of novel introduction, during the reign of Henry VIII. soon after his expedition against Tournay, appear early to have been well understood, and successfully cultivated; notwithstanding the prejudices of ignorance which are al-

ways active to catch at objections and impede improvements. It is certain, indeed, that hops were formerly raised in many places, where they are now neglected. It seldom answers, on a small scale, to cultivate any kind of crop that requires so much attention, and preparation for the market. The maxims here laid down for the management of hops, have been confirmed by long experience.

Or if it be mingled with rubbish and stone,  
For dryness and barrenness let it alone.

21. Chuse soil for the hop, of the rottenest mould,  
Well dunged and wrought, as a garden plot should :  
Not far from the water (but not overflown)  
This lesson well noted, is meet to be known.

Good for  
hops.

22. The sun in the south, or else southly and west,  
Is joy to the hop, as a welcomed guest ;  
But wind in the north, or else northerly (*b*) east,  
To hop is as ill, as a fray in a feast.

- 23 Meet plot for a hop-yard, once found as is told,  
Make thereof account, as of jewell of gold :  
Now dig it, and leave it the sun for to burn,  
And afterward fence it, to serve for that turn.

Now dig thy  
new hop-  
ground.

24. The hop for his profit, I thus do exalt,  
It strengtheneth drink, and it favoureth malt ;  
And being well brewed, long kept it will last,  
And drawing abide, if ye draw not too fast.

The praise of  
hops.

---

VARIATION.

(*b*) northly.

---

## I JULY'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XLIV.

1. Go, sirs, and away,  
To ted, and make hay.  
If storms draw nigh,  
Then cock apace, cry.
2. Let hay still bide,  
Till well it be dried.  
(Hay made) away carry,  
No longer then tarry.
3. Who best way titheth,  
He best way thriveth.
4. Two good hay-makers,  
Worth twenty crakers.
5. Let dallops about,  
Be mown, and had out.  
See hay do look green,—  
See field ye rake clean.
6. Thry fallow, I pray thee,  
Lest thistles bewray thee.
7. Cut off, good wife,  
Ripe bean with a knife.
8. Ripe hemp out cull,  
From carl to pull.  
Let seed hemp grow,  
Till more ye know.

9. Dry flax get in,  
For spinners to spin.  
Now mow or pluck,  
Thy brank or buck.
10. Some wormwood save,  
For March to have.
11. Mark physic true (*a*),  
Of wormwood and rue.  
Get grist to the mill,  
For wanting at will.

*Thus endeth July's Abstract, agreeing with July's  
Husbandry.*

## ¶ JULY'S HUSBANDRY.

### CHAP. XLV.

|                                   |                        |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| No tempest, good July,            | Forgotten, month past, |
| Lest corn ( <i>a</i> ) look ruly. | Do now at the last.    |

1. Go muster thy servants, be captain thyself<sup>1</sup>,  
Providing them weapon, and other like pelf:  
Get bottles and wallets, keep field in the heat,  
The fear is as much, as the danger is great.

Hay harvest,

### VARIATIONS.

(*a*) This couplet wanting, and some transpositions in the latter verses of this edition.

(*a*) all.

---

<sup>1</sup> Whoever wishes to thrive as a farmer, must either have a very active and honest bailiff, or, what is infinitely better, have a superintending eye, and frequently, a helping hand himself. The weapons and

## July's Husbandry.

2. With tossing and raking, and setting on cocks <sup>1</sup>,  
 Grass lately in swathes, is hay for an ox :  
 That done, go and cart it, and have it away,  
 The battle is fought, ye have gotten the day.

Pay thy tithes. 3. Pay justly thy tithes, whatsoever thou be <sup>2</sup>,  
 That God may in blessing send foison to thee :  
 Though vicar (*a*) be bad, or the parson as evil,  
 Go not for thy tithing thyself to the devil.

4. Let hay be well made, or *avise* else *arous* <sup>3</sup>,  
 For moulding in mow (*a*), or of firing the house.

## VARIATIONS.

(*a*) curate.(*a*) goef.

ammunition here directed, ought likewise to be duly provided before the work is begun, that there may be no loss of time in fetching them.

<sup>1</sup> Hay for neat cattle may be made with less labour, and more expeditiously than for horses; because, if it is a little mow burnt, it will not be the less acceptable to them; and besides, the fermentation it undergoes, if not carried too far, has a natural tendency to mellow coarse grass.

<sup>2</sup> That tithes, or the tenth part of the produce of the earth and of cattle, are of great antiquity, cannot admit of a dispute; yet to this moment their value is little known, or perversely disguised: the moderate composition which is generally received in lieu of them, is paid with

reluctance, and sometimes the whole is withheld by fraud. It should, however, be considered, that the ministers of religion have an indisputable title, both from human and divine sanctions, to what are called tithes; "and it seems," to adopt the words of Hilman, "to be naturally imprinted on the mind of man, that a part of the product of the earth ought to be dedicated to the Supreme Being, who by his rain and sun-shine produces it. As to the abuses, which have by man's depraved nature, been made of such dedications, they do not in the least countenance the disuse, or any farther abuse of them." For with our author,—“ Though vicar,” &c.

<sup>3</sup> *Avise arous*, is French jargon for *assure yourself*. Ill made hay is apt

Lay warrest aside, for the ox and the cow,  
The finest for sheep and thy gelding allow.

5. Then down with the headlands, that groweth about,  
Leave never a dallop, unmown and had out <sup>1</sup> ;  
Though grass be but thin about barley and pease,  
Yet picked up clean, ye shall find therein ease.

6. Thry fallow betime, for destroying of weed <sup>2</sup>,  
Lest thistle and dock fall a blooming and seed :  
Such season may chance, it shall stand thee upon,  
To till it again, ere a summer be gone.

Thry fallow-  
ing.

7. Not rent (a) off, but cut off, ripe bean with a knife <sup>3</sup>,  
For hindering stalk, of her vegetive life.  
So gather the lowest, and leaving the top,  
Shall teach thee a trick, for to double thy crop.

¶  
Gathering of  
garden-beans.

## VARIATION.

(a) rend.

to take fire; if much wetted with rain, to become mouldy. Hard and fine hay is best for horses; soft and coarse hay will be more acceptable to cattle; while short hay is coveted by sheep.

<sup>1</sup> *Dallops* are patches of land in arable, where the plough has not reached, owing to some natural or accidental impediment. From those and from headlands the grass is to be cut and removed, in order to be

better made, in situations where a freer circulation of air is admitted.

<sup>2</sup> Thry fallowing, or the third plowing, should be performed pretty early in the summer, in order that the ground may acquire sufficient hardness to resist the seeds of thistles and other weeds, even at the risk of requiring another stirring.

<sup>3</sup> This can only refer to garden-beans; but the practice is now wholly obsolete.



¶  
Gather yellow  
hemp.

8. Wife, pluck fro thy seed hemp, the fimble hemp  
clean<sup>1</sup>,

This looketh more yellow, the other more green :  
Use t'one for thy spinning, leave Michell the t'other,  
For shoe-thread and halter, for rope and such other.

¶  
9. Now pluck up thy flax, for the maidens to spin (a)<sup>2</sup>,  
First see it dried, and timely got in :  
And mow up thy brank, and away with it dry,  
And house it up close, out of danger to lie.

¶  
Wormwood  
get, against  
fleas and in-  
fection.

10. While wormwood hath seed, get a handfull or twain,  
To save against March, to make flea to refrain :  
Where chamber is swept, and wormwood is strown<sup>3</sup>,  
No flea, for his life, dare abide to be known.

11. (a) What savour is better, if physic be true,  
For places infected, than wormwood and rue ?  
It is as a comfort, for heart and the brain,  
And therefore to have it, it is not in vain.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) 9th stanza wanting.

(a) 11th stanza wanting.

<sup>1</sup> Fimble or female hemp, is that which is chiefly used for domestic purposes, and therefore falls to the care of the women; as earl, or male hemp, which produces the seed, does to the maker of cordage.

<sup>2</sup> Except when flax is left for seed, it should be pulled up during this month; and when greenish, it is certainly stronger and more proper for linen. As for buck-wheat or

brank, it is now either fed off or plowed in for manure; but never cut for hay.

<sup>3</sup> Cleanliness is a much better preventive against fleas than wormwood, though the latter is not without its local use. Together with rue, it was formerly in great repute against infection. The truth, however, is, that all strong-smelling plants act on the nervous system,



12. Get grist to the mill, to have plenty in store<sup>1</sup>,  
 Lest miller lack water, as many do more.  
 The meal the more yieldeth, if servant be true,  
 And miller that tolleth, take none but his due.

¶  
 Be sure of  
 bread and  
 drink for har-  
 vest.

## *Thus endeth July's Husbandry.*

and therefore probably do more harm than good. In the eleventh stanza, we find the popular belief of the sixteenth century, in regard to wormwood and rue.

<sup>1</sup> To lay in a proper store of necessities before the commencement of harvest, is no more than prudence requires, and especially of flour, as

water is apt to run scant towards the end of summer. From this passage it appears, that the character of millers was as suspicious in the days of our forefathers as at the present period; but they are now less trusted, as it is more usual to sell corn and to buy flour, than to carry grist to the mill.

# ¶ AUGUST'S ABSTRACT.

## CHAP. XLVI.

1. THRY fallowing won,  
Get compassing done.
2. In June, and in Au,  
Swinge brakes (for a law).
3. Pare saffron plot,  
Forget it not.  
His dwelling make trim,  
Look shortly for him.  
When harvest is gone,  
Then saffron comes on.
4. A little of ground,  
Brings saffron a pound.  
The pleasure is fine,  
The profit is thine.  
Keep colour in drying,  
Well used, worth buying.
5. Maids, mustard-seed reap,  
And lay on a heap.
6. Good neighbours in deed,  
Change seed for seed.
7. Now strike up drum,  
Come, harvest-man, come.  
Take pain for a gain,  
One knave mars twain.

8. Reap corn by the day,  
Lest corn do decay :  
By great, is the cheaper,  
If trusty were reaper.
9. Blow horn for sleepers,  
And cheer (*a*) up thy reapers.
10. Well doing who loveth,  
These harvest points proveth.
11. Pay God's part first,  
And not of the worst.
12. Now, parson, I say,  
Tithe carry away.
13. Keep cart-gap well,  
Scare hog from wheel.
14. Mow haulm to burn,  
To serve thy turn,  
To bake thy bread,  
To burn under lead.
15. Mown haulm being dry,  
No longer let lie :  
Get home thy haulm,  
While weather is calm.
16. Mown barley, less cost,  
Till mown much lost.
17. Reap barley with sickle,  
That lies in ill pickle,  
Let greenest stand,  
For making of band.  
Bands made without dew,  
Will hold but a few.

---

(*a*) " Give gloves to," &c.

## August's Abstract.

18. Lay band to find her,  
Two rakes to a binder.
19. Rake after scythe,  
And pay thy tithe.  
Corn carried all,  
Then rake it ye shall.
20. Let shock take sweat,  
Lest goff take heat :  
Yet it is best reason,  
To take it in season.
21. More often ye turn,  
More pease ye out spurn :  
Yet winnow them in,  
Ere carriage begin,
22. Thy carting ply,  
While weather is dry.
23. Bid goving climb,  
Gove just and trim.  
Lay wheat for seed,  
To come by at need.  
Seed-barley cast,  
To thresh out last.
24. Lay pease upon stack,  
If hovell ye lack,  
And cover it straight,  
From doves that wait.
25. Let gleaners glean,  
(The poor I mean.)  
Which ever ye sow,  
That first eat low :  
The other forbear,  
For rowen to spare,

26. Come home, lord, singing,  
Come home (a), corn bringing.  
'Tis merry in hall,  
Where beards wag all.
27. Once had thy desire,  
Pay workman his hire:  
Let none be beguil'd,  
Man, woman, nor child.
28. Thank God ye shall,  
And adieu for all (a).

## WORKS AFTER HARVEST.

29. Get tumbrel in hand.  
For barley land.
30. The better the muck,  
The better good luck.
31. Still carriage is good,  
For timber and wood.  
No longer delays,  
To mend the highways.
32. Some love as a jewel,  
Well placing of fuell.
33. In piling of logs,  
Make hovell for hogs.
34. Wife, plow, doth cry,  
To picking of rye.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) cart.

(a) In this edition, marked 23: several new articles being inserted in the edition of 1580, as are the whole of "Works after harvest."

## August's Abstract.

35. Such seed as ye sow,  
Such reap or else mow.
36. Take shipping, or ride,  
Lent stuff to provide.
37. Let haberden lie,  
In pease-straw dry.
38. When out ye ride,  
Leave a good guide.
39. Some profit spy out,  
By riding about.  
Mark now thorough year,  
What cheap, what dear.
40. Some skill doth well,  
To buy and to sell :  
Of thief who buyeth,  
In danger lieth.
41. Commodity known,  
Abroad is blown.
42. At first hand buy,  
At third let lie.
43. Have money, prest,  
To buy at the best.
44. Some cattle home bring,  
For Michaelmas spring.  
By hawk and hound,  
Small profit is found.
45. Dispatch, look home,  
To loitering mome.  
Provide, or repent,  
Milch cow for Lent,
46. Now crone your sheep,  
Fat those ye keep.

- Leave milking old cow,  
Fat aged up now.
47. Sell butter and cheese,  
Good fairs few leese.  
At fairs, go buy,  
Home wants to supply.
48. If hops look brown,  
Go, gather them down ;  
But not in the dew,  
For piddling with few.
49. Of hops this knack,  
A many doth lack :  
Once had thy will,  
Go cover his hill.
50. Take hop to thy dole,  
But break not his pole.
51. Learn here, thou stranger,  
To frame hop manger.
52. Hop-poles preserve,  
Again to serve.  
Hop-poles, by and by,  
Lay (*b c*) safe up to dry.  
Lest poles wax scant,  
New poles go plant.
53. The hop, kiln dri'd, '  
Will best abide.  
Hops dri'd in loft,  
Want tendance oft ;

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) Have *long* : evidently a misprint, corrected in some subsequent editions.



## August's Husbandry.

- And shed their seeds,  
 Much more than needs.
54. Hops dri'd, small cost,  
 Ill kept, half lost.  
 Hops quickly be spilt,  
 Take heed if thou wilt.
55. Some come, some go,  
 This life is so.

*Thus endeth August's Abstract, agreeing with August's  
 Husbandry.*

## † AUGUST'S HUSBANDRY.

### CHAP. XLVII.

Dry August and warm,  
 Doth harvest no harm.

Forgotten, month past,  
 Do now at the last.

Thry fallow-  
 ing.

1. THRY fallow once ended, go strike by and by',  
 Both wheat land and barley, and so let it lie;  
 And, as ye have leisure, go compas the same,  
 When up ye do lay it, more fruitful to frame.

\* Having finished thry fallowing,  
 or performed the third plowing, the  
 farmer is judiciously advised to  
 strike or harrow, in order that the

weeds may be torn up by the roots,  
 before any manure is applied, which  
 would otherwise encourage their ve-  
 getation.

2. Get down with thy brakes, ere an' showers do come <sup>1</sup>, Mowing of  
That cattle the better, may pasture have some : brakes.  
In June and in August, as well doth appear,  
Is best to mow brakes, of all times in the year.

3. Pare saffron between the two St. Mary's days <sup>2</sup>, Paring of  
Or set, or go shift it, that knoweth the ways. saffron.  
What year shall I do it, more profit to yield ?  
The fourth in the garden, the third in the field.

4. In having but forty foot, workmanly dight, ¶  
Take saffron enough for a lord and a knight. Huswifery.  
All winter time after (*b c*), as practice doth teach,  
What plot have ye better for linen to bleach ?

## VARIATION.

(*b c*) alter.

<sup>1</sup> Brakes or ferns have already been mentioned as constituting what is called the light firing in Norfolk. These, if cut pretty early, have not only a better chance of being well dried, but allow the tender grass to spring up, as an additional supply for cattle.

<sup>2</sup> Saffron, which was partially cultivated in Essex and Cambridge-shire, within the last twenty or thirty years, from the silence of the recent agricultural reporters of those

two counties, seems now to be neglected. It would therefore be useless to enlarge on this subject. English saffron, however, was reckoned equal to any of foreign growth; but for medical purposes, it is all equally inefficacious, and therefore justly disregarded. The two St. Mary's days are July 22, and August 15, between which, certain operations, in regard to the culture of saffron, are recommended.

- ¶ 5. (a) Maids, mustard-seed gather, for being too ripe <sup>1</sup>,  
 And weather it well, ere ye give it a stripe :  
 Then dress it, and lay it in sollar up sweet,  
 Lest foistiness make it, for table unmeet.
- ¶ 6. (a) Good huswives in summer will save their own  
 seeds <sup>2</sup>.  
 Against the next year, as occasion needs :  
 One seed for another, to make an exchange,  
 With fellowly neighbourhood, seemeth not strange.
- Corn harvest. 7. Make siür of reapers, get harvest in hand <sup>3</sup>,  
 The corn that is ripe, (a b) doth but shed as it stand :  
 Be thankful to God, for his benefits sent,  
 And willing to save it, with earnest intent.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) Stanzas 5 and 6 wanting.

(a b) do.

<sup>1</sup> As mustard-seed is very apt to shed, it should not be too ripe when gathered. After dressing, it is directed by our author to be laid up in a sollar, or upper apartment, where it may have the benefit of the sun and air.

<sup>2</sup> Good huswives will not only find it æconomical but amusing, to collect the different kinds of garden-seeds for next year's sowing ; and if they make an exchange with their neighbours, it will unquestionably be of advantage to both parties ; as the soil and the seed should never be allowed to become tired, or, in agricultural language, sick of each

other. Not only a judicious rotation of crops is necessary, but even the seed should frequently be changed. From want of attention to this established principle in the laws of nature, many failures have arisen, and many advantages have been lost. Rational practice, however, under the influence of superior and increasing intelligence, now begins to prevail in most parts of the kingdom.

<sup>3</sup> To secure abundance of strength in harvest is advisable on every principle of prudence and profit. Without this, even the blessings of Providence are sent in vain.

8. To let out thy harvest, by great, or by day,  
 Let this by experience lead thee the (*a b*) way :  
 By great will deceive thee, with ling'ring it out <sup>1</sup>,  
 By day will dispatch, and put all out of doubt.  
Champion by  
great, the  
other by day.
9. Grant harvest, lord, more, by a penny or two <sup>2</sup>,  
 To call on his fellows the better to do :  
 Give gloves to thy reapers, a largess to cry,  
 And daily to loiterers have a good eye.
10. Reap well, scatter not, gather clean that is shorn <sup>3</sup>,  
 Bind fast, shock apace, have an eye to thy corn ;  
 Load safe, carry home, follow time being fair,  
 Gove just in the barn, it is out of despair.  
Good harvest  
points.

---

VARIATIONS.

(*a*) away.

(*b*) a way.

---

<sup>1</sup> Though all the editions which I have seen, read, "By great will deceive thee," &c. I apprehend our author meant exactly the reverse. At least, experience tells us, that *day* labourers will deceive, while, the *great* will dispatch. In fact, in most operations of husbandry that can be reduced to measure, it is safest to let by the great, provided care be taken to see that the work is well done. In harvest, however, both sorts of labourers should be employed. The one for task work, the other to at-

tend early or late, by agreement, to whatever business the season and circumstances may require.

<sup>2</sup> To encourage the industrious, especially in harvest, and to have an eye to loiterers, should be the object of every good farmer. Whether it is now usual in any part of the kingdom to give gloves to harvest people when the crop is productive, does not fall within my personal knowledge to determine.

<sup>3</sup> In this stanza are comprised the principal labours of harvest. "To gove," is to make a mow.

## August's Husbandry.

11. Tithe duly and truly, with hearty good will<sup>1</sup>,  
That God and his blessing may dwell with thee still;  
Though parson neglecteth his duty for this,  
Thank thou thy Lord God, and give ev'ry man his.

Parson look to  
thy tithe.

12. Corn tithed, Sir Parson, together (*b c*) go get,  
And cause it on shocks, to be by and by set;  
Not leaving it scattering abroad on the ground,  
Nor long in the field, but away with it round.

Keep hog  
from cart-  
wheel.

13. To cart-gap and barn set a guide to look well<sup>2</sup>,  
And hoy out, Sir Carter, the hog fro thy (*a*) wheel:  
Lest greedy of feeding, in following cart,  
It noyeth or perisheth, spite of thy heart.

14. (*a*) In champion country a pleasure they take,  
To mow up their haulm, for to brew and to bake<sup>3</sup>;  
And also it stands them instead of their thack,  
Which being well inned, they cannot well lack.

---

VARIATIONS.

(*b c*) to gather.

(*a*) the.

(*a*) Wants stanzas 14 and 15.

---

<sup>1</sup> On every occasion, Tusser recommends and enforces the practice of justice, and especially in tithing, on the higher principles of religious duty. In the following stanza "Sir Parson" receives a monition.

<sup>2</sup> A good carter will doubtless take

care to have his horses led, wherever he is apprehensive of danger.

<sup>3</sup> Haulm of corn makes very poor firing for any purpose, and in the present times it is too valuable to be thus applied. Bean-haulm, however, is frequently burnt by the poor, and the ashes fetch a good price.

15. The haulm is the straw of the wheat or the rye,  
Which once being reaped, they mow by and by,  
For fear of destroying, with cattle or rain,  
The sooner ye load it, more profit ye gain.
16. The mowing of barley, if barley do stand <sup>1</sup>,  
Is cheapest and best, for to rid out of hand :  
Some mow it, and rake it, and set (a) it on cocks,  
Some mow it, and bind it, and set (a) it on shocks.  
Mowing of  
barley.
17. Of barley, the longest and greenest ye find <sup>2</sup>,  
Leave standing by dallops, till time ye do bind :  
Then early in morning, while dew is thereon,  
To making of bands, till the dew be all gone.  
Binding of  
barley.
18. One spreadeth those bands, so in order to lie,  
As barley (in swathes) may fill it thereby ;  
Which gathered up, with the rake and the hand,  
The follower after them, bindeth in band.  
Spreading of  
barley bands.
19. Where barley is raked, (if dealing be true,) <sup>3</sup>  
The tenth of such raking to parson is due ;  
¶  
Tithe of  
rakings.

## VARIATION.

(a) sets.

<sup>1</sup> Though barley is generally mown, it is a slovenly practice, unless when performed with a cradle scythe. A simple and expeditious instrument for reaping all kinds of grain, would be a valuable invention in agriculture. The sickle is almost as rude and inartificial as the flail.

<sup>2</sup> Patches of barley which have run to straw, are properly advised

to be cut for hands. Swatches or swathes are to have the bands so spread, as to facilitate the binding into sheaves.

<sup>3</sup> Hilman says that this stanza refers to the practice in Norfolk, where the clergyman takes his tithe in the swathe. Unless, however, the grain is purposely left, in order to defraud, tithes of the rakings are certainly not worth claiming.



## August's Husbandry.

Where scatt'ring of barley is seen to be much,  
There custom nor conscience tithing should grutch.

20. Corn being had down, (any way ye allow,) <sup>1</sup>  
Should wither as needeth, for burning in mow;  
Such skill appertaineth to harvest-man's art,  
And taken in time, is a husbandly part.

Usage of  
peason.

21. No turning of peason, till carriage ye make <sup>2</sup>,  
Nor turn in no more, than ye mind for to take;  
Lest beaten with showers, so turned to dry,  
By turning and tossing, they shed as they lie.

Lingering  
lubbers.

22. If weather be fair, and tidy thy grain <sup>3</sup>,  
Make speedily carriage, for fear of a rain;  
For tempest and showers deceiveth a many,  
And lingering lubbers lose many a penny.

Best manner  
of goving corn  
in the barn.

23. In goving at harvest, learn skilfully how <sup>4</sup>,  
Each grain for to lay, by itself on a mow:  
Seed-barley, the purest, gove out of the way,  
All other nigh hand, gove as just as ye may.

<sup>1</sup> Mow-burnt corn is neither fit for seed, nor yields so well in flour. It is therefore obvious, that it ought not to be carried, till it is sufficiently dry.

<sup>2</sup> This precept is to be taken with some limitations. Pease, indeed, ought not to be turned more than is absolutely necessary, as they are very apt to shed; but if they are turned only previous to carrying, it

is probable that the under side will be wholly green.

<sup>3</sup> *Tidy* means *neat, proper, and in season*. No good farmer will neglect opportunity, or defer till *to-morrow*, what may be effectually performed *to-day*.

<sup>4</sup> It is certainly a rational practice to pay a particular attention to corn intended for seed; and, as far as may be, to separate different qualities.



24. Stack pease upon hovell, abroad in the yard <sup>1</sup>,  
To cover it quickly let owner regard ;  
Lest dove and the cadow, there finding a smack,  
With ill stormy weather do perish thy stack.

Pease-stack.

25. Corn carried, let such as be poor go and glean <sup>2</sup>,  
And after thy cattle, to mouth it up clean ;  
Then spare it for rowen till Michel be past,  
To lengthen thy dairy, no better thou hast.

Leave glean-  
ing for the  
poor.

26. In harvest-time, harvest-folk, servants and all <sup>3</sup>,  
Should make, all together, good cheer in the hall ;  
And fill out the black bowl of blythe to their song,  
And let them be merry all harvest-time long.

<sup>1</sup> It is seldom that pease are now stacked in hovels; but, wherever they are placed, it is prudent to protect them from birds and the weather, with as little delay as possible.

<sup>2</sup> Gleaning is a very ancient practice, being founded on the Levitical law; but it has been much perverted from its original design, and has frequently been made an excuse for idleness, or furnished a temptation to pilfering. The poor, however, are very tenacious of their fancied rights; and when the corn is carried off the ground, but not till then, it would be uncharitable and inhuman to turn in cattle, before the aged and the infant paupers have had time "to glean the scattered ears that

fall." As for those who are able to work, they ought never to be allowed this privilege, while hands are required.

<sup>3</sup> In different parts of the kingdom, there are different customs in regard to the treatment of harvest folks; but in all, the labourer has some exclusive privileges during reaping-time, which ought to be a season of joy as well as of toil. It is often the hopes of a cheerful, though single entertainment, called harvest-home, that lightens the task; but how more easy will it be, under a kind and considerate master, who is daily in humble imitation of Providence, diffusing some comforts among his dependants.

- Pay truly harvest folk. 27. Once ended thy harvest, let none be beguil'd,  
Please such as did help thee—man, woman, and child ;  
Thus doing, with alway, such help as they can,  
Thou winnest the praise of the labouring man.
- Thank God for all. 28. Now look up to God-ward, let tongue never cease<sup>1</sup>,  
In thanking of him for his mighty increase :  
Accept my good will—for a proof go and try ;  
The better thou thrivest, the gladder am I.

## WORKS AFTER HARVEST (a).

29. Now carry out compas, when harvest is done<sup>2</sup>,  
Where barley thou sowest, my champion son ;  
Or lay it on heap, in the field as ye may,  
Till carriage be fair, to have it away.
30. Whose compas is rotten, and carried in time,  
And spread as it should be, thrift's ladder may climb.  
Whose compas is paltry, and carried too late,  
Such husbandry useth as many do hate.

## VARIATION.

(a) Wholly wanting in this edition.

<sup>1</sup> The concluding advice is worthy of a christian ; and if religiously observed, will produce the happiest effects on the heart and soul of man.

<sup>2</sup> Harvest being finished, there will be leisure to attend to the ma-

nuring of the land. Whether rotten or fresh dung is preferable, depends on the application and the soil. Arguments are often pushed to an extreme, both ways.

31. Ere winter preventeth, while weather is good <sup>1</sup>,  
For galling of pasture, get home with thy wood.  
And carry out gravel to fill up a hole,  
Both timber and furzen, the turf and the coal.
32. House charcoal and sedge, chip and coal of the land <sup>2</sup>, Well placing  
Pile tall-wood and billet, stack all that hath band ; of fuel.  
Blocks, roots, pole, and bough, set upright to the  
thatch,  
The nearer more handsome, in winter to fetch.
33. In stacking of bavin, and piling of logs,  
Make under thy bavin, a hovel for hogs ;  
And warmly enclose it, all saving the mouth,  
And that to stand open, and full to the south.
34. Once harvest dispatched, get wenches and boys,  
And into the barn, afore all other toys ;  
Choiced seed to be picked, and trimly well fy'd <sup>3</sup>,  
For seed may no longer from threshing abide.
35. Get seed afore hand, in a readiness had <sup>4</sup>,  
Or better provide, if thine own be too bad :

<sup>1</sup> There is a kind of wheels which will not cut into the turf, and these are much to be recommended; but it is still of greater importance to watch the opportunity of dry weather, in performing the various avocations indicated in this stanza.

<sup>2</sup> Put every thing in the best and securest order that relates to fuel. In stacking of bavins, where such firing is used, it may not be amiss to

provide for the hog, in the manner here prescribed.

<sup>3</sup> Where seed is steeped and brined, it would be a waste of time to pick it; as the light grains, which usually bear the smut, will swim at top. To *fy* is to clean.

<sup>4</sup> It is advisable not to commit the same seed to the same kind of soil; and great attention should undoubtedly be paid to its quality; for such as you sow you must expect to reap.

## August's Husbandry.

Be careful of seed, or else such as ye sow,  
Be sûer at harvest, to reap or to mow.

Provision for 36. When harvest is ended, take shipping or ride <sup>1</sup>,  
Lent, Ling, salt-fish, and herring, for Lent to provide :  
To buy it at first, as it cometh to road,  
Shall pay for thy charges, thou spendest abroad.

37. Chuse skilfully salt-fish, not burnt at the stone,  
Buy such as be good, or else let it alone :  
Get home that is bought, and go stack it up dry,  
With pease-straw between it, the safer to lie.

Compassing of 38. Ere ever ye journey, cause servant with speed <sup>2</sup>,  
Barley land. To compas thy barley land, where it is need.  
One acre well compassed, passeth some three,  
Thy barn shall at harvest declare it to thee.

39. This lesson is learned, by riding about <sup>3</sup>,  
The prices of victuals, the year thoroughout :  
Both what to be selling, and what to refrain,  
And what to be buying, to bring in again.

<sup>1</sup> We have already observed, that independent of religious considerations, it is greatly to be lamented, both on the score of health and policy, that Lent and fish-days in general are so wholly neglected by protestants. It cannot be too often repeated, that the encouragement of the fisheries would increase and perpetuate our naval strength.—To pack salt-fish in pease-straw is evidently proper, to keep it dry and sweet.

<sup>2</sup> The practice of dunging barley land at this season, is not consistent with the most improved modes of modern farming.

<sup>3</sup> The facility of communication, and the numerous means that farmers now enjoy, through the medium of the press, of acquiring knowledge, render "riding about" less necessary, for the sake of buying and selling to advantage; though the more opulent and enlightened agriculturists make occasional tours, in

40. Though buying and selling doth wonderfull well,  
To such as have skill, how to buy and to sell;  
Yet chopping and changing I cannot commend,  
With thief and his marrow, for fear of ill end.
41. The rich in his bargaining need not be taught<sup>1</sup>,  
Of buyer and seller, full far is he sought;  
Yet herein consisteth a part of my text,  
Who buyeth at first hand, and who at the next.
42. At first hand he buyeth, that payeth all down<sup>2</sup>,  
At second, that hath not so much in the town:  
At third hand he buyeth, that buyeth of trust,  
At *his* hand who buyeth, shall pay for his lust.  
Buying at first  
hand.
43. As oft as ye bargain, for better or worse,  
To buy it the cheaper, have chinks in thy purse.  
Touch kept is commended, yet credit to keep,  
Is pay and dispatch him, ere ever ye sleep.  
Ready money  
buyeth best  
cheap.
44. Be mindfull, abroad, of a Michaelmas spring<sup>3</sup>,  
For thereon dependeth a husbandly thing:  
Though some have a pleasure, with hawk upon hand, Hawking.  
Good husbands get treasure, to purchase their land.

order to witness the practices of other districts. These, however, may now be found detailed in the Reports of the Board of Agriculture.

<sup>1</sup> The reputation of ready money, and of a faithful regard to engagements, will always deservedly command the market; and to buy at first hand, without the intervention

of middle-men and jobbers, would be a saving to numbers, and a loss only to the few, who equally prey on the farmer and the public, without contributing to the advantage of either.

<sup>2</sup> On this and the following stanza I shall only remark, that they deserve to be committed to memory.

<sup>3</sup> Our author slyly aims a stroke

## August's Husbandry.

45. Thy market dispatched, turn home again round <sup>1</sup>,  
Lest gaping for penny thou lovest a pound,  
Provide for thy wife, or else look to be shent,  
Good milch cow for winter, another for Lent.

Winter milch  
cow.

- Old ewes. 46. In travelling homeward, buy forty good crones <sup>2</sup>,  
And fat up the bodies of those seely bones :  
Leave milking, and dry up old Mulley thy cow ;  
The crooked and aged, to fattening put now.

Buying or sell-  
ing of butter  
and cheese.

47. At Bartlemew tide, or at Sturbridge fair <sup>3</sup>,  
Buy that as is needfull, thy house to repair.  
Then sell to thy profit, both butter and cheese,  
Who buyeth it sooner, the more he shall leese.

Hops gather-  
ing.

48. If hops do look brownish, then are ye too slow <sup>4</sup>,  
If longer ye suffer these hops for to grow :  
Now sooner ye gather, more profit is found,  
If weather be fair, and dew off a ground.

---

VARIATION.

(b) of.

of his pen at sporting farmers. The hawk of former days, is now changed for the dog and the gun. The diligent cultivator, however, will have little time to spare for field sports, at any season of the year. If he means to "get treasure," he must always be on the alert.

<sup>1</sup> Do not overstand your market, nor loiter away your time. Though a milch cow or two may be useful in families, a winter dairy is far from being productive.

<sup>2</sup> Crones are old ewes; but the

number must depend on the size of the farm, and the means of fattening them. The same may be said of neat cattle. August, however, is a suitable time to separate such as are to be fed from the rest.

<sup>3</sup> St. Bartholomew's day is the 24th of August. Sturbridge fair, near Cambridge, is held on the 18th of September, and a fortnight following. It is still the great mart for the neighbouring counties, though much declined.

<sup>4</sup> The value of hops (concerning



49. Not break off, but cut off, from hop the hop-string,      Increasing of  
Leave growing a little, again for to spring ;      hops.  
Whose hill about pared, and therewith new clad,  
Shall nourish more sets, against March to be had.
50. Hop hillock discharged of every let,      The order of  
See, then, without breaking, each pole ye out get ;      hop-gathering.  
Which being untangled, above in the tops,  
Go carry to such as are plucking of hops.
51. Take soutage, or hair, that covers the kell,      Hop-manger.  
Set like to a manger, and fastened well ;  
With poles upon crotches, as high as thy breast,  
For saving and riddance, is husbandry best.
52. Hops had, the hop-poles that are likely, preserve      Save hop-  
From breaking and rotting, again for to serve ;      poles.  
And plant ye with alders or willows a plot,  
Where yearly, as needeth, mo poles may be got.
53. Some skilfully drieth their hops on a kell,      Drying of  
And some on a sollar, oft turning them well.      hops.

the culture of which several incidental remarks have already been made) much depends on the colour. But the propriety of the precepts relative to the management of this plant, which are continued to the end of the chapter, will be perfectly understood by the experienced grower, and any remarks on them would be

useless to the generality of readers, who have no opportunity of ascertaining the correctness of our author's directions. I therefore conclude my notes on the Agricultural part of the work, which alone deserves particular illustration, in the words of Tusser :

“ Accept my good will—for a proof go and try,  
The better thou thriveest, the gladder am I.”



## August's Husbandry.

Kell dried will abide, foul weather or fair,  
Where drying and lying, in loft do despair.

Keeping of  
hops.

54. Some close them up dry in a hogshead or fat,  
Yet canvas or soutage is better than that :  
By drying and lying, they quickly be spilt,  
Thus much have I shewed ; do now as thou wilt.

55. Old farmer is forced long August to make,  
His goods at more leisure away for to take :  
New farmer, he thinketh each hōur a day,  
Untill the old farmer be packing away.

*Thus endeth and holdeth out August's Husbandry till  
Michaelmas Eve.*

THO. TUSSEK.



## ¶ CORN HARVEST.

EQUALLY DIVIDED INTO TEN PARTS<sup>1</sup>,

### CHAP. XLVIII. (a)

1. ONE part cast forth, for rent due out of hand.
2. One other part, for seed to sow thy land.
3. Another part, leave parson for his tithe.
4. Another part, for harvest sickle and scythe.
5. One part, for plough-wright, cart-wright, knacker and smith.
6. One part, to uphold thy teams that draw therewith.

For napery,  
sopery, candle,  
salt and sauce,  
tinker and  
cooper, brass  
and pewter.

#### VARIATION.

(a) This chapter wanting.

<sup>1</sup> If the produce of harvest has been divided, according to the rent paid for land at the time this was written, the distribution is very different from what a modern Agricultural Reporter would make. To allow only one part in ten for rent is far below the present average value of land. If the whole produce will clear four rents, an industrious farm-

er would have no reason to complain, though he is now subject to heavy taxes, which, it is to be remarked, are not included in the list of outgoings; and if he can quintuple his rent, he ought to be satisfied that he has a very good bargain. I speak not of any particular produce, but of the whole income from the farm.

## Corn Harbest.

7. One part, for servant, and workman's wages lay.
8. One part, likewise, for fill-belly, day by day.
9. One part thy wife, for needful things doth crave.
10. Thyself and child, the last one part would have.

Who minds to quote  
Upon this note,  
    May easily find enough ;  
What charge and pain,  
To little gain,  
    Doth follow toiling plough.

Yet farmer may  
Thank God and say,  
    For yearly such good hap ;  
Well fare the plough,  
That sends enow,  
    To stop so many a gap.

---

CHAP. XLIX.

THE thrifty that teacheth the thriving to thrive,  
Teach timely to traverse, the thing that thou 'trive,  
Transferring thy toiling, to timeliness taught,  
This teacheth thee temp'rance, to temper thy thought.  
Take Trusty (to trust to) that thinkest to thee,  
That trustily thriftiness trowleth to thee.  
Then temper thy travell, to tarry the tide,  
This teacheth thee thriftiness, twenty times try'd.  
Take thankfull thy talent, thank thankfully those,  
That thriftily teacheth thy time to transpose.  
Troth twice to be teach'd, teach twenty times ten,  
This trade thou that takest, take thrift to thee then (a).

'Trive, for con-  
trive.

Thee, for  
thrive.

VARIATION.

(a) Subscribed Thomas Tusser.

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps this was the most difficult chapter, according to its length, that our author had to compose; yet he has strained alliteration to the most extravagant pitch; for when he writes *trive* for *contrive*, and for the

sake of the rhyme uses *thee* for *thrive*, we cannot help pitying the miserable expedients to which he was reduced, in order to accomplish his design. In other respects the advice is good.

**A** Man's Age divided here ye have,  
By prenticeships, from birth to grave<sup>1</sup>.

---

CHAP. L.

7. THE first seven years, bring up as a child,  
14. The next to learning, for waxing too wild.  
21. The next, keep under Sir Hobbard de Hoy,  
28. The next, a man, no longer a boy.  
35. The next, let Lusty lay wisely to wive,  
42. The next, lay now, or else never to thrive.  
49. The next, make sure, for term of thy life,  
56. The next, save somewhat for children and wife.  
63. The next, be stayed, give over thy lust,  
72. The next, think hourly, whither thou must.  
77. The next, get chair, and crutches to stay,  
84. The next, to Heaven, God send us (a) the way!  
Who loseth their youth, shall rue it in age!  
Who hateth the truth, in sorrow shall rage. (a)

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) thee.

(a) Divided into four lines.

---

<sup>1</sup> In the reign of Elizabeth, an act was passed, requiring a seven years apprenticeship to enable a person to set up in business or trade; and hence the idea arose, of dividing human life into periods of seven years, which is done with some degree of neatness and conformity to truth and nature. On this occasion, however, though not strictly connected with the subject, it ought to be remarked, that the restriction of

seven years to learn the most easy and insignificant trade, is such a waste of time as cannot be reconciled to any principle of policy or justice. But while freedoms in corporations depend on serving for this long period, which is more than the tenth part of the average of life, it perhaps might be difficult to alter the law, where local privileges interpose; beyond the verge of cities and boroughs, it cannot be too soon

# Another Division of the Nature of Man's Age<sup>1</sup>.

199

---

## CHAP. LI.

THE Ape, the Lion, the Fox, the Ass,  
Thus sets forth man, as in a glass.

*Ape.* Like Apes we be toying, till twenty and one,  
*Lion.* Then hasty as Lions, till forty be gone.  
*Fox.* Then wiley as Foxes, till threescore and three,  
*Ass.* Then after for Asses, accounted we be.

Who plays with his better this lesson must know,  
What humbleness Fox to the Lion doth owe :  
For Ape with his toying, and rudeness of Ass,  
Brings (out of good hōur) displeasure to pass.

---

swept from the Statute Book. Examination as to abilities is undoubtedly requisite, in the professions more especially ; but no length of time should give a dunce distinction : no want of it should prevent talents from being called into exercise.

<sup>1</sup> The preceding division shews both ingenuity and reflection : in this we find less of truth, and a more

forced application. It is besides humiliating to reflect, (if the reflection were just), that for the first twenty-one years of life we are APES, and after threescore and three, to be accounted ASSES. Let it, however, be deeply impressed on the minds of those who are advancing to years of discretion, that—" who loseth their youth, shall rue it in age."

---

Comparing good Husband, with unthrift  
his brother,  
The better discerneth the t'one from the  
t'other <sup>1</sup>.

CHAP. LII.

1. Ill husbandry braggeth  
To go with the best :  
Good husbandry baggeth  
Up gold in his chest.
2. Ill husbandry trudgeth  
With unthrifts about :  
Good husbandry snudgeth,  
For fear of a doubt.
3. Ill husbandry spendeth  
Abroad, like a mome :  
Good husbandry tendeth,  
His charges at home.
4. Ill husbandry selleth  
His corn on the ground :  
Good husbandry smelleth  
No gain that way found.
5. Ill husbandry loseth,  
For lack of good fence ;  
Good husbandry closeth,  
And gaineth the pence.

---

<sup>1</sup> The contrast in this chapter is likewise so clear, that no illustration well kept up ; and as memorial lines would throw additional light on the they cannot be remembered without advantage. The meaning is sentiments, or give them more impressiveness.



6. Ill husbandry trusteth  
To him and to her ;  
Good husbandry lusteth,  
Himself for to stir.
7. Ill husbandry eateth,  
Himself out of door :  
Good husbandry meateth,  
His friend and the poor.
8. Ill husbandry dayeth,  
Or letteth it lie :  
Good husbandry payeth,  
The cheaper to buy.
9. Ill husbandry lurketh,  
And stealeth a sleep :  
Good husbandry worketh,  
His houshold to keep.
10. Ill husbandry liveth,  
By that and by this :  
Good husbandry giveth  
To every man his.
11. Ill husbandry taketh,  
And spendeth up all :  
Good husbandry maketh,  
Good shift with a small.
12. Ill husbandry prayeth,  
His wife to make shift :  
Good husbandry saith,  
Take this of my gift.

## Comparing good Husbandry, &amp;c.

13. Ill husbandry drowseth,  
At fortune so awk :  
Good husbandry rouseth,  
Himself as a hawk.
14. Ill husbandry lieth,  
In prison for debt :  
Good husbandry spieth,  
Where profit to get.
15. Ill husbandry ways  
Hath, to fraud what he can :  
Good husbandry praise  
Hath, of every man.
16. Ill husbandry never  
Hath wealth to keep touch :  
Good husbandry ever,  
Hath penny in pouch.
- Good husband his boon,  
Or request hath afar :  
Ill husband as soon,  
Hath a toad with an R.
-

CHAP. LIII.

1. The country enclosed I praise,  
The t'other delighteth not me ;  
For nothing the wealth it doth raise,  
To such as inferior be.

<sup>a</sup> The enlightened mind of Tussler, strengthened by practical knowledge, enabled him to adjust the comparison between enclosures and commons, with the greatest truth and accuracy; yet to this day we hear the prejudices of ignorance kept alive by empty declaimers against enclosures, without which, under the circumstance of such an encreased population, we should literally have been starved; and till every parish is thrown into severalty, we cannot even now be said to avail ourselves of our resources in that manner which the exigencies of the times require.

In the reigns of Edward VI. and Elizabeth there were some serious insurrections, especially in Norfolk and the neighbouring counties, on account of some enclosures, which had taken place under a decree in Chancery, or according to the com-

mon or statute law, the only modes by which this great improvement was effected, till the time of Queen Anne, when the first enclosure bill was passed in parliament.\*.

But however beneficial, and however necessary enclosures may be, it is not to be concealed, that the manner in which they are accomplished is so expensive and troublesome, as to deter many from lending them their sanction. While the interests of clerks, either in or out of parliament, are suffered to clash with the public good; while a general Enclosure Act is opposed from selfish and narrow views, we can scarcely be said to have passed the confines of agricultural barbarism, or risen above the horizon of improvement. Let it not, however, be imagined that I am advocating the cause of a party, or that I would wish the interests of the humblest cottager to be

[\* See the publication by the Board of Agriculture, on the subject of Enclosures, and the progress they have made.]

## A Comparison between

How both of them (*a*) partly I know,  
Here somewhat I mind for to shew<sup>1</sup>.

Champion.

2. There swineherd, that keepeth the hog,  
There neatherd, with cow and his horn ;  
There shepherd, with whistle and dog,  
Be fence to the meadow and corn.  
There horse, being tied to a balk,  
Is ready with thief for to walk.
  
3. Where all things in common do rest,  
Corn field with the pasture and mead ;  
Though common ye do for the best,  
Yet what doth it stand ye in stead :  
There common as commoners use (*a*),  
For otherwise shalt thou not chuse.

---

VARIATIONS.

(*a*) Because of them both.

(*a*) “ do,” the second line, “ as good else to cobble a shoe.”

---

invaded, without compensation ; but when I see, in the best cultivated counties, thousands of acres still managed on the common field system—when I see the richest meadows neglected, undrained, and producing only half crops of coarse herbage, because they are Lammas land, or open at certain seasons of the year, I feel a certain paramount duty to the public, over petty claims, and am anxious that a better course should prevail, in order to increase

the quantity of corn and stock, and to render a sufficiency of bread and meat accessible to all, except the idle and the profligate. And, in republishing this work, I flatter myself that I am doing some good, by enabling my readers to weigh the arguments of an author, who must be allowed to be exempt from partiality, and to write from conviction alone.

<sup>1</sup> In this chapter we again find the verse adopted by Shenstone.

4. What layer much better than there,  
 Or cheaper (thereon to do well ?)  
 What drudgery more any where,  
 Less good thereof where can ye tell ?  
 What gotten by summer is seen,  
 In winter is eaten up clean.

5. Example by Leicestershire,  
 What soil can be better than that ?  
 For any thing heart can desire,  
 And yet doth it want, ye see what.  
 Mast, covert, close pasture, and wood,  
 And other things needfull as good.

6. All these doth (*b c*) enclosure bring,  
 Experience teacheth no less :  
 I speak not, to boast of the thing,  
 But only a truth to express.  
 Example, if doubt ye do make,  
 By Suffolk and Essex go take <sup>1</sup>.

Enclosure.

7. More plenty of mutton and beef,  
 Corn, butter, and cheese of the best,  
 More wealth any where, to be brief,  
 More people, more handsome and prest,

Severall.

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) do.

---

<sup>1</sup> It appears from this line, that Essex and Suffolk were early distinguished for the number of their enclosures, and that the advantages were obvious from the abundance of produce, and the comfort of the inhabitants.

## A Comparison between

Where find ye ? (go search any coast,)   
 Than there, where enclosure is most.

8. More work for the labouring man,  
     As well in the town as the field ;  
 Or thereof (devise if ye can)  
     More profit, what countries do yield ?  
 More seldom, where see ye the poor,  
 Go begging from door unto door ?

Champion  
country.

9. In Norfolk, behold the despair  
     Of tillage, too much to be born,  
 By drovers, from fair to fair,  
     And others destroying the corn.  
 By custom and covetous pates,  
 By gaps, and by opening of gates.
10. What speak I of commoners by,  
     With drawing all after a line ;  
 So noying the corn as it lie,  
     With cattle, with conies and swine.  
 When thou hast bestowed thy cost,  
 Look half of the same to be lost.
11. The flocks of the lords of the soil,  
     Do yearly the winter corn wrong ;  
 The same in a manner they spoil,  
     With feeding so low and so long.  
 And therefore that champion field,  
 Doth seldom good winter corn yield.

Champion  
royaues.

12. (a) By Cambridge, a town I do know,  
Where many good husbands do dwell,  
Whose losses by lossels do shew,  
More here than is needfull to tell.  
Determine at Court what they shall<sup>1</sup>,  
Performed is nothing at all.

13. The champion robbeth by night,  
And prowleth and filcheth by day;  
Himself and his beast, out of sight,  
Both spoileth and maketh away.  
Not only thy grass but thy corn,  
Both after, and ere it be shorn.

14. Pease-bolt with thy pease he will have,  
His household to feed and his hog;  
Now stealeth he, now will he crave,  
And now will he cozen and cog.  
In Bridewell, a number be stript,  
Less worthy than thief to be whipt.

15. The ox-boy as ill is as he,  
Or worser, if worse may be found,  
For spoiling from thine and from thee,  
Of grass and of corn on the ground.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) From the twelfth to the twenty-first stanza, inclusive,  
wanting.

---

<sup>1</sup> Courts for presenting nuisances, are generally the greatest nuisances themselves. Under the semblance of justice, they often retard its execution. The members, or jury who compose them, do not want the power, but they want the independence to act right.



## A Comparison between

Lay never so well for to save it,  
By night or by day, he will have it.

16. What orchard, unrobbed, escapes ?  
     Or pullet dare walk in their jet ?  
 But homeward or outward (like apes)  
     They count it their own they can get.  
 Lord ! if ye do take them, what sturs ?  
 How hold they together like burs ?

17. For commons, these commoners cry.  
     Enclosing they may not abide ;  
 Yet some be not able to buy,  
     A cow with her calf by her side.  
 Nor lay not to live by their work,  
 But thievishly loiter and lurk.

18. The lord of the town is to blame,  
     For these and for many faults mo ;  
 For that he doth know of the same,  
     Yet lets it unpunished go.  
 Such lords ill example doth give,  
 Where varlet and drabs may so live.

19. What foot-paths are made, and how broad,  
     Annoyance too much to be borne ;  
 With horse and with cattle what road,  
     Is made thorough every man's corn ?  
 Where champions ruleth the roast,  
 There daily disorder is most.

20. Their sheep where they drive for to wash,  
 How careless such sheep they do guide ?  
 The farmer they leave in the lash,  
 With losses on every side.  
 Though any man's corn they do bite,  
 They will not allow him a mite.

21. What hunting and hawking is there<sup>1</sup> ?  
 Corn looking for sickle at hand ;  
 Acts lawless to do without fear,  
 How yearly together they band.  
 More harm to another to do,  
 Than they would be done so unto.

22. More profit is quieter found,  
 (Where pastures in severall be ;)  
 Of one seely acre of ground,  
 Than champion maketh of three.  
 Again what a joy it is known,  
 When men may be bold of their own ?

23. The t'one is commended for grain,  
 Yet bread made of beans they do eat :  
 The t'other for one loaf hath twain,  
 Of meslin, of rye, or of wheat.  
 The champion liveth full bare ;  
 When woodland full merry doth fare.

Champion.

Severall.

---

<sup>1</sup> Among the other evils attending common fields, we find hunting and hawking enumerated. The latter has passed away ; but the former, in spite of increasing enclosures, and the consequent danger of the sport from gates, hedges, and ditches, continues to be pursued with animation, even by some of the Nimrod farmers themselves, who participate in the destruction of their own property, and seem to enjoy their losses!

## A Comparison between

- Champion. 24. T'one giveth his corn in a dearth,  
To horse, sheep, and hog every day :  
Severall. The t'other give cattle warm barth,  
And feed them with straw and with hay.  
Corn spent of the t'one so in vain,  
The t'other doth sell to his gain.
- Champion. 25. T'one barefoot and ragged doth go,  
And ready in winter to starve ;  
Severall. When t'other ye see do not so,  
But hath that is needfull to serve,  
T'one pain in a cottage doth take,  
When t'other trim bowers do make.
- Champion. 26. T'one layeth for turf and for sedge,  
And hath it with wonderfull suit ;  
Severall. When t'other in every hedge,  
Hath plenty of fuel and fruit.  
Evils twenty times worser than these,  
Enclosure quickly would ease.
- Severall. 27. In woodland, the poor men that have,  
Scarce fully two acres of land,  
More merrily live, and do save  
Than t'other with twenty in hand.  
Yet pay they as much for the two,  
As t'other for twenty must do.
28. The labourer coming from thence,  
In woodland to work any where,  
(I warrant you) goeth not hence,  
To work any more again there.  
If this same be true (as it is,)  
Why gather they nothing of this ?

29. The poor at enclosures do (c) grutch<sup>1</sup>,  
 Because of abuses that fall ;  
 Lest some man should have but too much,  
 And some again nothing at all.  
 If order might therein be found ;  
 What were to the severall ground (a) ?

---

## VARIATIONS.

(c) doth.

(a) In this edition follows “ Thus endeth Husbandry, Here followeth Huswifery.”

---

<sup>x</sup> That abuses, and, indeed, gross abuses, have taken place on enclosing, from not allowing the poor a compensation for their just rights, are facts that cannot be denied ; but such conduct is equally impolitic and cruel. An allotment of land in lieu of cottage commons, to be let to the best bidder, and the rent to be expended in fuel, would be a real advantage to all persons concerned. Bind the poor man by his interest as well as his duty, to the place where he lives, and he will feel the pride of deserving well.

---

## ■ The Description of an envious and naughty Neighbour (a) <sup>1</sup>.

### CHAP. LIV.

AN envious neighbour is easy to find,  
His cumbersome fetches are seldom behind.  
His hatred procureth from naughty to worse,  
His friendship like Judas, that carried the purse,

#### VARIATION.

(a) Wanting in this edition; which, however, has the subsequent poem, omitted, for some unknown reasons, in the following editions. It certainly evinces a perfect knowledge of life and manners, though the sentiments may be thought too free.

#### TO LIGHT A CANDLE BEFORE THE DEVIL.

To beard thy foe, shews little wit,  
But helps the matter, ne'er a whit.

1. My son, it were not worst,  
To frame thy nature so;  
That as thine use is to thy friend,  
Likewise to greet thy foe.  
Though not for hope of good,  
Yet for the fear of evil;  
Thou mayst find ease, so offering up  
A candle to the Devil.

---

<sup>1</sup> "The description of an envious and naughty neighbour," is drawn with a faithful pencil, in colours of infamy. Tusser had probably experienced the misery of being connected with such a neighbour, and strongly expressed what he deeply felt.

His head is a store-house with quarrels full fraught,  
His brain is unquiet, till all come to naught.  
His memory pregnant, old ills to recite,  
His mind ever fixed, each ill to requite.

---

## VARIATION.

2. This known, the surest way,  
Thine en'my's wrath to 'suage,  
If thou canst curry favour thus,  
Thou shalt be counted sage.  
Of truth, I tell no lie,—  
By proof too well I know,  
The stubborn want of only this,  
Hath brought full many low.
3. And yet to speak the truth,  
The Devil is worse than naught,  
That no good turn will once deserve,  
Yet looketh up so haught.  
Exalt him, how we please,  
And give him what we can ;  
Yet scarcely shall we find the Devil,  
A trusty honest man.
4. But where the mighty may,  
Of force the weak constrain ;  
It will be wisely done, to bow,  
To 'scape a further pain :  
Like as in tempest great,  
Where wind doth bear the stroke,  
Much safer stands the bowing reed,  
Than doth the stubborn oak.

## Description of an envious Neighbour.

His mouth full of venom, his lips out of frame,  
 His tongue a false witness, his friend to defame.  
 His eyes be promoters, some trespass to spy,  
 His ears be as spials, alarum to cry.

---

 VARIATION.

5. And chiefly when of all,  
 Thyself art one of those,  
 That Fortune needs will have to dwell,  
 Fast by the Devil's nose.  
 Then (though against thine heart,)  
 Thy tongue thou must so charm ;  
 That tongue may say, where'er thou come,  
 The Devil doth nobody harm.
  
6. For where as no revenge,  
 May stand a man in stead ;  
 As good is then an humble speech,  
 As otherwise to bleed.  
 Like as ye see by him,  
 That hath a shrew to wife ;  
 As good it is to speak her fair,  
 As still to live in strife.
  
7. Put thou no Devil in boot,  
 As once did Master Shorne ;  
 Take heed, as from mad baited bull,  
 To keep thee from his horn.  
 And where ye see the Devil,  
 So well to wrest with law ;  
 Make cougé oft, and crouch aloof,  
 But come not in his claw.



His hands be as tyrants, revenging each thing,  
 His feet at thine elbow, as serpent to sting.  
 His breast full of rancour, like canker to fret,  
 His heart, like a lion, his neighbour to eat.

---

## VARIATION.

8. The scholar forth of school,  
     May boldier talk his mind :  
 The fields have eyes, the bushes ears,  
     False words can fetch the wind.  
 The further from the gun,  
     The safer may ye skip :  
 The nearer to the carter's hand,  
     The nearer to the whip.
9. The nearer to the whip,  
     The sooner comes the jerk ;  
 The sooner that poor beast is struck,  
     The sooner doth he yerk.  
 Some loveth for to whip,  
     To see how jerks will smart :  
 In woefull taking is that horse,  
     That needs must draw in cart.
10. Such fellow is the Devil,  
     That doth even what he list ;  
 Yet thinketh he, whate'er he doth,  
     That none dare say—but whist !  
 Take therefore heed, my son,  
     And mark full well this song ;  
 Learn thus with craft to claw the Devil,  
     Else live in rest not long.

FINIS.

## Description of an envious Neighbour.

His gait, like a sheep-biter, fleering aside,  
 His look, like a coxcomb, up puffed with pride.  
 His face made of brass, like a vice in a game <sup>1</sup>,  
 His gesture like Davus, whom Terence doth name.  
 His brag, as Thersites, with elbows abroad,  
 His cheeks, in his fury, shall swell like a toad.  
 His colour like ashes, his cap in his eyes,  
 His nose in the air, his snout in the skies.  
 His promise to trust to, as slippery as ice,  
 His credit much like to the chance of the dice.  
 His knowledge or skill is in prating too much,  
 His company shunned, and so be all such.  
 His friendship is counterfeit, seldom to trust,  
 His doings unlucky, and ever unjust.  
 His fetch is to flatter, to get what he can,  
 His purpose once gotten, a pin for thee then.

---

<sup>1</sup> *A vice*, in this place, is the fool or who of course was not too modest.  
 punchinello of old plays or games,

---

■ A Sonnet against a slanderous  
Tongue<sup>1</sup>.

---

217

CHAP. LV.

Doth darnell good, among the flow'ry wheat ?  
Do thistles good, so thick in fallows spy'd ?  
Do taint worms good, that lurk where ox should eat ?  
Or sucking drones, in hives where bees abide ?  
Do hornets good, or these same biting gnats ?  
In house well deckt, what good do gnawing rats ?  
Foul swelling toads, what good by them is seen ?  
Or casting moles, among the meadows green ?  
Doth heavy news make glad the heart of man ?  
Or noisome smells, what good doth that to health ?  
Now once for all, what good (shew who so can ?)  
Do stinging (a) snakes, to this our commonwealth ?  
No more doth good, a peevish slanderous tongue,  
But hurts itself, and noys both old and young.

---

VARIATION.

(a) stinking.

---

<sup>1</sup> There is a smoothness in the versification of this sonnet, and a succession of imagery, though drawn from common sources, which we do not often find in Tusser. He has made a good use of the figure *erotesis*.

# **A Sonnet upon the Author's first seven Years Service<sup>1</sup>.**

## CHAP. LVI.

SEVEN times, hath Janus ta'en new year by hand,  
Seven times, hath blustering March blown forth his power,  
To drive out April's buds, by sea and land,  
For minion May, to deck most trim with flower.

Seven times, hath temperate *Ver*, like pageant play'd,  
And pleasant *Æstas*, eke, her flowers told :

Seven times, *Autumnus* heat hath been delay'd,  
With *Hyems* boisterous blasts, and bitter cold.

Seven times, the thirteen moons have changed hue,  
Seven times, the sun his course hath gone about :

Seven times, each bird her nest hath built anew,  
Since, first time you to serve, I chused out.

Still yours am I, though thus the time hath past,  
And trust to be, as (a) long as life shall last.

## VARIATION.

(a) so.

<sup>1</sup> What was said in regard to the versification of the former sonnet applies to this, which, however, possesses at the same time some of the higher graces of poetry. The attachments of Tusser seem to have been cordial and lasting; they descended, as they ought to do, from father to son.

MAN minded for to thrive,  
Must wisely lay to wive :  
What hap may thereby fall,  
Here argued, find ye shall.

¶ THE AUTHOR'S DIALOGUE  
BETWEEN TWO BACHELORS,  
OF WIVING AND THRIVING.

BY AFFIRMATION AND OBJECTION <sup>1</sup>.

CHAP. LVII.

*Affirmation.*

FRIEND, where we met this other day,  
We heard one make his moan, and say,  
Good Lord ! how might I thrive ?  
We heard another answer him,  
Then make thee handsome, trick and trim,  
And lay in time to wive.

<sup>1</sup> It appears from the books of the Stationers' Company, on the authority of Warton, that a licence was granted to T. Hacket, in the year 1562, to print " A Dialogue of Wiving and Thriving." An edition of the Points of Husbandry was published the same year.

The manner of conducting this dialogue, by affirmation and objec-

tion, and the arguments used, *pro* and *con*, are not destitute of ingenuity. It is evident, however, that the bias of Tusser's mind, and his practice corresponded with it, was in favour of marriage, prudently contracted; which is the order of nature, and not only necessary for the happiness of individuals, but to the preservation of civilized society.

## Of Wiving and Thriving.

### *Objection.*

And what of that, say you to me ?  
 Do you, yourself, think that to be,  
     The best way for to thrive ?  
 If truth were truly bolted out,  
 As touching thrift, I stand in doubt,  
     If men were best to wive.

### *Affirmation.*

There is no doubt, for prove I can,  
 I have but seldom seen that man,  
     Which could the way to thrive ;  
 Until it was his happy lot,  
 To stay himself in some good plot,  
     And wisely then to wive.

### *Objection.*

And I am of another mind,  
 For by no reason can I find,  
     How that way I should thrive :  
 For where, as now, I spend a penny,  
 I should not then be quit with many,  
     Through bondage, for to wive.

### *Affirmation.*

Not so, for now where thou dost spend,  
 Of this and that, to no good end,  
     Which hindreth thee to thrive :  
 Such vain expences thou should'st save,  
 And daily then lay more to have,  
     As others do that wive.

*Objection.*

Why then do folk, this proverb put,  
The black ox near trod on thy foot,  
If that way were to thrive :  
Here out a man may soon pick forth,—  
Few feeleth what a penny is worth,  
Till such time as they wive.

*Affirmation.*

It may so chance, as thou dost say,  
This lesson therefore bear away,  
If thereby thou wilt thrive :  
Look ere thou leap, see ere thou go,  
It may be for thy profit so,  
For thee to lay to wive.

*Objection.*

It is too much, we daily hear,  
To wive and thrive both in a year,  
As touching now to thrive :  
I know not herein what to spy,  
But that there doth small profit lie,  
To fancy for to wive.

*Affirmation.*

Indeed, the first year oft is such,  
That fondly some bestoweth much,—  
A let to them to thrive :  
Yet other mo may soon be found,  
Which getteth many a fair pound,  
The same day that they wive.



## Of Wiving and Thriving.

### *Objection.*

I grant, some getteth more that day,  
 Than they can eas'ly bear away,  
 Now needs then must they thrive :  
 What gaineth such, think you by that ?  
 A little burden—you wot what,  
 Through fondness for to wive.

### *Affirmation.*

Thou seemest blind, as mo have been ;  
 It is not beauty bringeth in,  
 The thing to make thee thrive :  
 In woman-kind, see that ye do,  
 Require of her no gift but two,  
 Whene'er (c) ye mind to wive.

### *Objection.*

But two, say you ? I pray you than,  
 Shew these as briefly as you can,  
 If that may help to thrive :  
 I ween we must conclude anon,  
 Of those same twain to want the t'one  
 Whene'er we (c) chance to wive.

### VARIATIONS.

(c) reads *as* for *e'er*.

(c) reads *when* as *ye*.

*Affirmation.*

An honest huswife, trust to me<sup>1</sup>,  
Be those same twain, I say to thee,  
That help so much to thrive :  
As honesty far passeth gold,  
So huswifery, in young and old,  
Do pleasure such as wive.

Honesty and  
Huswifery.

*Objection.*

The honesty, indeed, I grant,  
Is one good point a wife should haunt,  
To make her husband thrive :  
But now, fain would I have you shew,  
How should a man good huswife know,  
If once he hap to wive ?

*Affirmation.*

A huswife good, betimes will rise,  
And order things in comely wise,—  
Her mind is set to thrive :  
Upon her distaff she will spin,  
And with her needle she will win,  
If such ye hap to wive.

*Objection.*

It is not idle going about,  
Nor all day pricking on a clout,  
Can make a man to thrive :

---

<sup>1</sup> The two qualities of a good wife which are justly considered as essential, are *honesty* and *huswifery*. In the former are included all the moral virtues of the sex ; in the latter, diligence and œconomy, without which, all other acquirements are useless.

## Of Wiving and Thriwing.

Or, if (*a*) there be no other winning,  
But that the wife gets by her spinning,  
Small thrift it is to wive.

### *Affirmation.*

Some more than this yet do she shall,  
Although thy stock be very small,  
Yet will she help thee thrive :  
Lay thou to save, as well as she,  
And then thou shalt enriched be,  
When such thou hapst (*a*) to wive.

### *Objection.*

If she were mine, I tell thee troth,  
Too much to trouble her, I were loath,  
For greediness to thrive :  
Lest some should talk, as is the speech,  
The good wife's husband wears no breech,  
If such I hap to wive.

### *Affirmation.*

What hurts it thee what some do say,  
If honestly, she take the way,  
To help thee for to thrive :  
For honesty will make her prest,  
To do the thing that shall be best,  
If such ye hap to wive.

---

### VARIATIONS.

(*a*) if else.

(*a*) you hap.

*Objection.*

Why did Diogenes say then,  
To one that askt of him time when,  
Were best to wive to thrive ?  
Not yet (quoth he) if thou be young,  
If thou wax old, then hold thy tongue,  
It is too late to wive.

*Affirmation.*

Belike he knew some shrewish wife,  
Which with her husband made such strife,  
That hinder'd him to thrive :  
Who then may blame him for that clause,  
Though then he spake, as some had cause,  
As touching for to wive.

*Objection.*

Why then I see, to take a shrew,  
(As seldom other there be few)  
Is not the way to thrive :  
So hard a thing, I spy it is,  
The good to chuse, the shrew to miss,  
That feareth me to wive.

*Affirmation.*

She may in something seem a shrew,  
Yet such a huswife, as but few,  
To help thee for to thrive :  
This proverb, look, in mind ye keep,  
As good a shrew is, as a sheep,  
For you to take to wive.

## Of Wiving and Thriving.

### *Objection.*

Now, be she lamb, or be she ewe,  
 Give me the sheep, take thou the shrew,  
     See which of us shall thrive :  
 If she be shrewish, think for troth,  
 For all her thrift I would be loth,  
     To match with such to wive.

### *Affirmation.*

Tush ! farewell then, I leave you off (a),  
 Such fools as you who love to scoff,  
     Shall seldom wive to thrive :  
 Contrary her, as you do me,  
 And then ye shall, I warrant ye,  
     Repent ye, if ye wive.

### *Objection.*

Friend, let us both give justly place,  
 To wedded man to judge this case,  
     Which, best way is to thrive :  
 For both our talk, as seemeth plain,  
 Is but as happened in our brain,  
     To will or not to wive.

---

### VARIATION.

(a) of.

---

## UPON THE FORMER ARGUMENT.

(a) As cock that wants his mate, goes roving all about, Moderator.  
 With crowing early and late, to find his lover out ;  
 And as poor silly hen, long wanting cock to guide,  
 Soon droops, and shortly then begins to peak aside ;  
 Even so it is with man and wife, where government is  
 sound.  
 The want of t'one, the other's (a) life, doth shortly soon  
 confound.

In jest and in earnest, here argued ye find,  
 That husband and huswife together must dwell,  
 And thereto the judgment of wedded man's mind,  
 That husbandry otherwise speedeth not well :  
 So somewhat more now I intend for to tell,  
 Of huswifry, like as of husbandry told,  
 How huswifely huswife helps bring in the gold.

Thus endeth the Book of Husbandry.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) Printed in four line stanzas.

(a) t'others.

<sup>1</sup> The wedded man's judgment, which may be supposed that of the author himself, in quality of moderator, is strongly but indelicately expressed. The whole poem "Of Wiving and Thriving," may be considered as a Proem to the Book of Huswifery, to which it properly should have been annexed. It serves, however, as a suitable intermediate link, between both books.





# A TABLE

OF THE

## Points of Husbandry

MENTIONED

IN THIS BOOK (a).

| Page                                                                   | Page                                                                                            |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| A LESSON how to confer<br>every Abstract with his<br>Month . . . . . i | worthy to be followed of<br>such as will thrive . . . . . xxi                                   |
| The Author's Epistle to the<br>late Lord William Paget. . . . . iii    | An Habitation enforced;<br>better late than never .. . . . xxxv                                 |
| To Lord Thomas Paget .. . . . v                                        | The Farmer's daily Diet .. . . . xxxvi                                                          |
| To the Reader . . . . . x                                              | A Description of the Pro-<br>perties of the Wind, at all<br>Times of the Year . . . . . xxxviii |
| An Introduction to the Book<br>of Husbandry . . . . . xiii             | Of the Planets . . . . . xxxix                                                                  |
| A Preface to the Buyer of<br>this Book . . . . . xiv                   | September's Abstract . . . . . 1                                                                |
| The Commodities of Hus-<br>bandry . . . . . xv                         | Other short Remembrances<br>for September . . . . . 6                                           |
| The Praise of Husbandry .. . . . xvi                                   | September's Husbandry .. . . . 7                                                                |
| The Description of Hus-<br>bandry . . . . . xvii                       | A Digression to Husbandly<br>Furniture .. . . . 9                                               |
| The Ladder to Thrift . . . . . xviii                                   | The Residue of September's<br>Husbandry . . . . . 16                                            |
| Good Husbandly Lessons,                                                | October's Abstract . . . . . 25                                                                 |

### VARIATIONS.

(a) " The Table of the Book of Husbandry," containing only the titles of the chapters.

# A Table of the Points of Husbandry.

|                                 | Page |                                | Page |
|---------------------------------|------|--------------------------------|------|
| Other short Remembrances        |      | February's Abstract .....      | 101  |
| for October .....               | 29   | Other short Remembrances       |      |
| October's Husbandry .....       | 31   | for February .....             | 103  |
| A Digression to the Usage of    |      | February's Husbandry .....     | 106  |
| divers Countries, concern-      |      | March's Abstract .....         | 114  |
| ing Tillage .....               | 33   | Other short Remembrances       |      |
| The Residue of October's        |      | for March .....                | 117  |
| Husbandry .....                 | 33   | Seeds and Herbs for the        |      |
| November's Abstract .....       | 42   | Kitchen .....                  | 118  |
| Other short Remembrances        |      | Herbs and Roots for Sallads    |      |
| for November .....              | 45   | and Sauce .....                | 119  |
| November's Husbandry ....       | 46   | Herbs and Roots, to boil or to |      |
| December's Abstract .....       | 54   | butter .....                   | 121  |
| Other short Remembrances        |      | Strewing Herbs of all sorts .. | 121  |
| for December .....              | 56   | Herbs, Branches, and Flowers,  |      |
| December's Husbandry .....      | 58   | for Windows and Pots ...       | 122  |
| A Digression to Hospitality     | 65   | Herbs to still, in Summer .... | 123  |
| A Description of Time and       |      | Necessary Herbs to grow in     |      |
| the Year .....                  | 66   | the Garden, for Physic, not    |      |
| A Description of Life and       |      | rehearsed before .....         | 124  |
| Riches .....                    | 67   | March's Husbandry .....        | 125  |
| A Description of House-keep-    |      | April's Abstract .....         | 133  |
| ing .....                       | 68   | April's Husbandry .....        | 135  |
| A Description of Christmas ..   | 69   | A Digression to Dairy Matters  | 140  |
| A Description of Apt Time to    |      | A Lesson for Dairy-maid Cis-   |      |
| spend .....                     | 71   | ley, of ten topping Guests     | 142  |
| Against fantastical Scrupleness | 72   | May's Abstract .....           | 145  |
| Christmas Husbandly Fare ..     | 73   | Two other short Remem-         |      |
| A Christmas Caroll .....        | 74   | brances for May. ....          | 148  |
| January's Abstract .....        | 77   | May's Husbandry .....          | 149  |
| Other short Remembrances        |      | June's Abstract .....          | 159  |
| for January .....               | 83   | A Lesson of Hop-yard .....     | 160  |
| Of Trees or Fruits(a) to be set |      | June's Husbandry .....         | 161  |
| or removed .....                | 85   | A Lesson where and when to     |      |
| January's Husbandry .....       | 86   | plant good Hop-yard ....       | 166  |

## VARIATION.

(a) Both here and in the text, *roots*.

# A Table of the Points of Husbandry.

|                              | Page |                               | Page |
|------------------------------|------|-------------------------------|------|
| July's Abstract .....        | 168  | A Comparison between good     |      |
| July's Husbandry .....       | 169  | Husbandry and bad .....       | 200  |
| August's Abstract .....      | 174  | A Comparison between Cham-    |      |
| Works after Harvest .....    | 177  | pion Country and Severall     | 203  |
| August's Husbandry .....     | 180  | The Description of an envious |      |
| Works after Harvest .....    | 188  | and naughty Neighbour ..      | 212  |
| Corn Harvest equally divided |      | A Sonnet against a slanderous |      |
| into ten Parts .....         | 195  | Tongue .....                  | 217  |
| A brief Conclusion in Verse, |      | A Sonnet upon the Author's    |      |
| every Word beginning with    |      | first seven Years Service ..  | 218  |
| a T .....                    | 197  | The Author's Dialogue be-     |      |
| Man's Age, from seven Years  |      | tween two Bachelors of        |      |
| to four-score and four ....  | 198  | Wiving and Thriving .....     | 219  |
| Another Division of the Na-  |      | The Wedded Man's Judg-        |      |
| ture of Man's Age .....      | 199  | ment <sup>1</sup> .....       | 227  |

---

<sup>1</sup> In some Editions, we find subjoined to this, paginal references to a few remarkable passages, or scattered receipts for the cure and management of live stock, which, however, require no particular indication. It may be useful, however, to remark, that the poem restored from the edition of 1673, "To light a Candle before the Devil," is introduced under VARIATIONS, at p. 212.



THE  
POINTS  
OF  
**Huswifery,**  
UNITED TO  
THE COMFORT  
OF  
**Husbandry\*.**

---

By Thomas Tusser,  
Gentleman.

---

\* The Title in the standard editions is *verbatim* thus :

“ The Points of Huswifery, united to the Comfort of Husbandry, newly corrected and amplified, with divers good Lessons for Housholders, to recreate the Reader, as by the Table at the end hereof, more plainly may appear.”

“ Set forth by Thomas Tusser, Gentleman.”

 THE BOOK of HUSWIFERY, as it may be called, and which presents a genuine picture of the domestic œconomy of farmers, in the reign of Elizabeth, appears to have been first added in the year 1561 or 1562, as Warton, in his History of English Poetry, quotes from the books of the Stationers' Company, an entry of the first date, authorising Richard Tottell to print " One Hundred Points of Husbandry, lately married unto a Hundred good Points of Huswifery, newly corrected and amplified." On the authority of that accurate antiquary, Mr. Park, whose attentions I gratefully acknowledge, the same title is continued in the edition of 1570, which he esteems nearly as rare as the original. Hence it may be inferred, that the principal alterations and additions were introduced into the edition of 1573, which was the first that announced the " Five Hundred Points," &c.

## THE EPISTLE.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND MY ESPECIALL GOOD  
LADY AND MISTRESS, THE LADY PAGET<sup>1</sup>.

1. THOUGH danger be mickle,  
And favor so fickle ;  
Yet duty doth tickle  
    My fancy to write :  
Concerning how pretty,  
How fine and how netty,  
Good huswife should jetty  
    From morning to night.
2. Not minded by writing,  
To kindle a spighting (*b c*),  
But shew by inditing,  
    As afterward told,

## VARIATION.

(*b c*) spiting.

---

<sup>1</sup> William, the first Lord Paget, and the patron of Tusser, married Anne, daughter of Mr. Prestin, of the county of Lancaster; and to her, it is most probable, the Book of Huswifery was dedicated, and not to Margaret, the daughter of Sir H. Newton, and lady of Thomas, Lord Paget. See note in the Biographical Sketch.



## The Epistle.

How husbandry easeth,  
 So (*b c*) huswifery pleaseth,  
 And many purse greaseth  
 With silver and gold.

3. For husbandry weepeth,  
 Where huswifery sleepeth,  
 And hardly he creepeth,  
 Up ladder to thrift :  
 That wanteth to bold him,  
 Thrift's ladder to hold him,  
 Before it be told him,  
 He falls without shift.

4. Lest many should fear me,  
 And others forswear me,  
 Of troth I do bear me  
 Upright, as ye see :  
 Full minded to love all,  
 And not to reprove all,  
 But only to move all,  
 Good huswives to be.

5. For if I should mind some,  
 Or descant behind some,  
 And missing to find some,  
 Displease so I mought ;  
 Or if I should blend them,  
 And so to offend them,  
 What stir I should send them,  
 I stand in a doubt (*b c*).

---

 VARIATIONS.

(*b c*) to.

(*b c*) dought.

6. Though harmless I make it,  
And some do well take it,  
If others forsake it,  
    What pleasure were that ?  
Naught else, but to pain me,  
And nothing to gain me,  
But make them disdain me,  
    I wot ne'er for what.
  
7. Lest some make a trial,  
As clock by the dial,  
Some stand to denial,  
    Some murmur and grudge :  
Give judgment, I pray you,  
For justly so may you ;  
So fancy, so say you,  
    I make you my judge.
  
8. In time, ye shall try me,  
By troth, ye shall spy me  
So find, so set by me,  
    According to skill :  
However tree groweth,  
The fruit, the tree sheweth,  
Your Ladyship knoweth,  
    My heart and good will.
  
9. Though fortune doth measure,  
And I do lack treasure,  
Yet if I may pleasure  
    Your Honor with this ;

## To the Reader.

Then will me to mend it,  
Or mend ere ye send it,  
Or any where lend it,  
If ought be amiss.

Your Ladyship's Servant,

THOMAS TUSSEK.

## ¶ TO THE READER (a.)<sup>1</sup>.

1. Now listen, good huswives, what doings are here,  
Set forth for a day, as it should for a year :  
Both easy to follow, and soon to atchieve,  
For such as by huswifery looketh to thrive.
  
2. The forenoon affairs, till dinner (with some)  
Then afternoon doings, till supper-time come ;  
With breakfast and dinner time, sup and to bed,  
Stand, orderly placed, to quiet thine head.

### VARIATION.

(a) The Address to the Reader wanting in this edition.

<sup>1</sup> The Address to the Reader was first introduced in the edition of 1580 ; and it would appear from the last stanza that he was a widower when he penned it, or at least when he first wrote on the subject of

Huswifery :

“ Then bear with a *widower's* pen  
as ye may,

“ Though Husband of Huswifery  
somewhat doth say.”

3. The meaning is this—for a day what ye see,  
That monthly and yearly, continued must be;  
And hereby to gather, (as prove I intend),  
That huswifery matters have never an end.
  4. I have not by hear-say, nor reading in book,  
Set out (peradventure) that some cannot brook;  
Nor yet of a spite, to be doing with any,  
But such as have scared me, many a penny.
  5. If widow, both huswife and husband may be,  
What cause hath a widower, lesser than she?  
'Tis needfull that both of them look well about;  
Too careless within, and too lazy without.
  6. Now, therefore, if well ye consider of this,  
What losses and crosses come daily amiss:  
Then bear with a widower's pen as ye may,  
Though husband of huswiferie, somewhat doth say.
-

## ¶ THE PREFACE TO THE BOOK OF HUSWIFERY <sup>1</sup>.

1. TAKE weapon away, of what force is a man ?  
Take huswife from husband, and what is he than ?
2. As lovers desireth together to dwell,  
So husbandry loveth good huswifery well.
3. Though husbandry seemeth, to bring in the gains,  
Yet huswifery labours, seem equal in pains.
4. Some respite to husbands the weather may send,  
But huswives' affairs have never an end.

As true as thy faith,  
Thus huswifery saith.

The praise of  
huswifery.

I serve for a day, for a week, for a year,  
For life-time, for ever, while man dwelleth here.  
For richer, for poorer, from north to the south,  
For honest, for hardhead, for dainty of mouth.  
For wed and unwedded, in sickness and health,  
For all that well liveth, in good commonwealth.  
For city, for country, for court, and for cart,  
To quiet the head, and to comfort the heart.

---

<sup>1</sup> In his preface, the author shews the intimate affinity that subsists between husband and huswife, and that on the attentions of the latter, whose works are to be reiterated daily, the success and the comfort of the former must principally depend.

---

## ¶ A DESCRIPTION OF HUSWIFE AND HUSWIFERY <sup>1</sup>.

- 
1. OF huswife, doth huswifery challenge that name,  
Of huswifery, huswife doth likewise the same.  
Where husband and husbandry joineth with these.  
There wealthiness gotten, is holden with ease.
  
  2. The name of a huswife, what is it to say ?  
The wife of the house, to the husband a stay.  
If huswife doth that, as belongeth to her,  
If husband be witty, there needeth no stir.
  
  3. The huswife is she, that to labour doth fall,  
The labour of her I do huswifery call :  
If thrift by that labour be honestly got,  
Then is it good huswifery, else it is not.
  
  4. The woman the name of a huswife doth win,  
By keeping her house, and of doings therein ;  
And she that with husband, will quietly dwell,  
Must think on this lesson, and follow it well.

---

<sup>1</sup> This antithetical description the Description of Husbandry.  
seems to have been introduced, in Chap. VIII.  
order that it might correspond with

---

## INSTRUCTIONS TO HUSWIFERY<sup>1</sup>.

---

SERVE GOD is the first ;  
True love is not worst.

1. A daily good lesson, of huswife indeed,  
Is God to remember, the better to speed.
2. Another good lesson, of huswifery thought,  
Is huswife with husband to live as she ought.  
Wife comely, no grief,  
Man out, huswife chief.
3. Though tricky (*b c*) to see to, be gallant to wive,  
Yet comely and wise, is the huswife to thrive.
4. When husband is absent, let huswife be chief,  
And look to their labour, that eateth her beef.  
Both out, not allow,  
Keep house, huswife thou !

---

VARIATION.

(*b c*) trickily.

---

<sup>1</sup> No huswife, whatever her rank in life may be, ought to neglect the precepts contained in these instructions. They are founded on the fear of God and affection to her partner. Without feeling the force of those two powerful ties, it is impossible for a woman to acquit herself in her domestic relations, with credit and satisfaction. The maxims are so much adapted to every sphere, and are so plain, that if they are not strictly committed to memory, they ought to be constantly in the recollection, in order that they may be adopted as practical rules of action.



5. Where husband and huswife be both out of place,  
Their servants do loiter, and reason their case.
6. The huswife, so named (of keeping the house)  
Must tend on her profit, as cat on the mouse.  
    Seek home for rest,  
    For home is best.
7. As huswives keep home, and be stirrers about,  
So speedeth their winnings, the year thoroughout.
8. Though home be but homely, yet huswife is taught,  
That home hath no fellow to such as have aught.  
    ¶ Use all with skill,  
    Ask what ye will.
9. Good usage, with knowledge and quiet withall,  
Makes huswife to shine, as the sun on the wall.
10. What husband refuseth, all comely to have,  
That hath a good huswife, all willing to save.  
    Be ready at need,  
    All thine to feed.
11. The case of good huswives, thus daily doth stand,  
Whatever shall chance, to be ready at hand.
12. This care hath a huswife, all day in her head,  
That all thing in season, be huswifely fed.  
    By practice go muse,  
    How houshold to use.

## Instructions to Huswifery.

13. Dame practice is she, that to huswife must (*b c*) tell,  
Which way for to govern her family well.
14. Use labourers gently, keep this as a law,  
Make child to be civil, keep servant in awe.  
Who careless do live,  
Occasion do give.
15. Have, everywhere, a respect to thy ways,  
That none of thy life any slander may raise.
16. What many do know, though a time it be hid,  
At length will abroad, when a mischief shall bid.  
No neighbour reprove,  
Do, as (*a b*) to have love.
17. The love of thy neighbour, shall stand thee in stead,  
The poorer the gladder, to help at a need.
18. Use friendly thy neighbour, else trust him in this,  
As he hath thy friendship, so trust unto his.  
¶ Strike nothing, unknown,  
Take heed to thine own.
19. Revenge not thy wrath, upon any man's beast,  
Lest thine by like malice, be bid to like feast.
20. What husband provideth with money his drudge,  
The huswife must look to, which way it doth trudge.

---

### VARIATIONS.

(*b c*) doth, *perhaps the best reading.*

(*a b*) so.

---

A DIGRESSION<sup>1</sup>.

Now out of the matter, this lesson I add,  
Concerning cock-crowing, what profit is had.  
Experience teacheth, as true as a clock,  
How winter night passeth, by marking the cock.

Cock croweth at midnight, few times above six,  
With pause to his neighbour, to answer betwix :  
At three a clock thicker ; and then as ye know,  
Like all in to mattins, near day they do crow.

At midnight, at three, and an hōur ere day,  
They utter their language, as well as they may ;  
Which who so regardeth, what counsel they give,  
Will better love crowing, as long as they live.

Cock-crowing.

For being afraid (*a*),  
Take heed, good maid :  
Mark crowing of cock,  
For fear of a knock.

## VARIATION.

(*a*) fraid.

<sup>1</sup> The observations on cock-crowing, not only evince an accurate knowledge of the habits and instincts of this domestic bird, but confirm the remark of others, that early rising was the practice of our ancestors. To quit their beds at three o'clock in the morning, in order to expedite the business of the day, or "to cobble and botch," would be little relished by modern servants ; who, in some situations, are only retiring to rest, at an hour when those in a similar sphere of life were quitting their pillows, in the sixteenth century.

## Cock-Crowing.

¶ The first cock croweth.

At midnight. Ho ! (a) dame, it is midnight, what rumbling is that ?

The next cock croweth (a).

Take heed to false harlots, and more, ye wot what.

If noise ye hear,

Look all be clear.

Lest drabs do noy thee,

And thieves destroy thee.

¶ The first cock croweth.

At three a clock. Maids ! three a clock-knead, lay your bucks, or go brew.

The next cock croweth.

And cobble and botch, ye that cannot buy new.

Till cock crow again,

Both maidens and men,

Amend with speed,

That mending doth need (a).

¶ The first cock croweth.

At the break of day. Past five a clock, Holla ! maid, sleeping beware,

The next cock croweth.

Lest quickly your mistress uncover you bare.

Maids, up, I beseech ye,

Lest mistress do breech ye.

To work and away,

As fast as ye may.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) showeth ; and the same in the two following divisions.

(a) Both maiden and man,

Mend now what ye can :

Leave gibber gabber,

Mend slibber slabber.

---

## ¶ HUSWIFERY <sup>1</sup>.

### ¶ MORNING WORKS (a).

No sooner some (c) up,  
But nose is (c) in cup.

1. Get up in the morning as soon as thou wilt,  
With over-long slugging, good servant is spilt.
2. Some slovens, from sleeping no sooner get (a) up,  
But hand is in aumbry, and nose in the cup.  
That early is done,  
Count huswifely won.

3. Some work in the morning, may trimly be done,  
That all the day after, can hardly be won.

Morning  
works.

### VARIATIONS.

(a) Instead of the title "Morning Works," is the following couplet:—

Now listen, good huswives, what huswifery here,  
Set out for a day, as it should for a year.

(c) Wants *some*.

(c) Wants *is*.

(a) be.

<sup>1</sup> We are here presented with the huswifery labours and duties of the day, which return in endless succession. If the morning is lost, "all the day after can hardly be won."

This cannot be too deeply impressed on the mind. Cleanliness and activity in the various domestic concerns are likewise forcibly recommended.

## Huswifery.

4. Good husband, without, it is needfull there be,  
Good huswife, within, is as needfull as he.  
Cast dust into yard,  
And spin and go card.
5. Sluts' corners avoided, shall further thy health,  
Much time about trifles, shall hinder thy wealth.
6. Let some to peel hemp, or else rushes to twine,  
To spin, or to card, or to seething of brine.  
Grind malt for (a) drink,  
See meat do not stink.
7. Set some about cattle, some pasture to view,  
Some malt to be grinding, against ye do brew.
8. Some corneth, some brineth, some will not be taught,  
Where meat is attained, their cookery is naught.

---

VARIATION.

(a) for to.

---

# ¶ BREAKFAST DOINGS (a) <sup>1</sup>.

To breakfast that come,  
Give every one some.

1. Call servants (c) to breakfast, by day-star appear,  
A snatch, and to work—fellows tarry (c) not here.

Breakfast.

2. Let huswife be carver, let (a) pottage be heat,  
A mess to each one, with a morsell of meat.

No more tittle tattle,  
Go serve your cattle.

3. What tack in a pudding, saith greedy gut wringer,  
Give such, ye wot what, ere a pudding he finger.

4. Let servants once served, thy cattle go serve,  
Lest often ill serving make cattle to sterve.

## VARIATIONS.

(a) Wants several of the sub-titles, including the whole under the general word, "Huswifery."

(c) servant.

(c) loiter.

(a) see.

<sup>1</sup> It appears, in winter it is presumed, that servants were called to breakfast "by the appearance of the day star!" and that pottage, with a morsel of meat, was their

fare. It is recommended too that the huswife perform the office of carver: a proof that she was expected to be an early riser, as well as her domestics.



## HUSWIFELY ADMONITIONS<sup>1</sup>.

LEARN you that will thée,  
This lesson of me (*a*).

Thée for  
thrive.

1. No breakfast of custom, provide for to save,  
But only for such as deserveth to have.
2. No shewing of servant, what victuals in store,  
Shew servant his labour, and shew him no more.

Of havock beware,  
Cat nothing will spare.

3. Where all thing is common, what needeth a hutch?  
Where wanteth a saver, there havock is much.
4. Where window is open, cat maketh a fray,  
Yet wild cat with two legs, is worse, by my fay.

### VARIATION.

(*a*) How dainty some be.

<sup>1</sup> These rules are extremely plain, and therefore require no particular illustration. It may only be remarked, *en passant*, though it is not the first time, that the rod was formerly used by masters and mistresses to correct their servants; yet our author wisely censures a propensity to chiding.

For the general management, indeed, of domestics, no directions can be more just; and the conduct to be observed towards them, if we except chastisement, is founded on good sense. Though modes may have varied, human nature is still the same.

Look well unto thine;

Shut slothfull must whine.

5. An eye in a corner, who useth to have,  
Revealeth a drab, and preventeth a knave.
6. Make maid to be cleanly, or make her cry creak;  
And teach her to stir, when her mistress doth speak.

Let holly wand threat,

Let Fizgig be beat.

7. A wand in thy hand, though ye fight not at all,  
Makes youth to their business, better to fall.
8. For fear of fool had I wist, cause thee to wail,  
Let Fizgig be taught, to shut door after tail.

Too (a) easy the wicket,

Will still appease clicket.

9. With her that will clicket, make danger to cope,  
Lest quickly her wicket seem easy to ope.
10. As rod, little mendeth, where manners be spilt,  
So naught will be naught, say and do what thou wilt.

Fight seldom ye shall,

But use not to brawl.

11. Much brawling with servant, what man can abide?  
Pay home when thou fightest, but love not to chide.
12. As order is heavenly, where quiet is had,  
So error is hell, or a mischief as bad.

---

VARIATION.

(a) to.

## Huswifely Admonitions.

What better a law,  
Than subjects in awe?

13. Such awe as a warning will cause to beware,  
Doth make the whole household the better to fare.
14. The less of thy counsel thy servants do know,  
Their duty the better, such servants shall shew.

Good music regard,  
Good servants reward.

15. Such servants are oftenest painfull and good,  
That sing in their labour, as birds in the wood.
16. Good servants hope justly, some friendship to feel,  
And look to have favour, what time they do well.

By once or twice,  
'Tis time (*a*) to be wise.

17. Take Runagate Robin, to pity his need,  
And look to be filched, as sure as thy creed.
18. Take warning by once, that a worse do not hap,  
Foresight is the stopper of many a gap.

Some change for a shift :  
Oft change, small thrift.

19. Make few of thy counsel, to change for the best,  
Lest one that is trudging, infecteth the rest.
20. The stone that is rolling, can gather no moss,  
For master and servant, oft changing is loss.

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) good.

Both liberall, sticketh,  
Some provender pricketh.

21. One dog for a hog, and one cat for a mouse ;  
One ready to give, is enough for a house.

One liberall.

22. One gift ill accepted, keep next in thy purse,  
Whom provender pricketh, are often the worse.

## ¶ BREWING <sup>1</sup>.

BREW somewhat for thine,  
Else bring up (a) no swine.

1. Where brewing is needfull, be brewer thyself,  
What filleth the roof, will help furnish the shelf.
2. In buying of drink, by (c) the firkin or pot,  
The tally ariseth, but hog amends not.

.Brewing.

### VARIATIONS.

(a) keep.

(c) buy—*probably a misprint.*

<sup>1</sup> Though the advantages of home-brewing, both on the score of health and oeconomy, are so numerous, yet the practice is too generally neglected. The poorman, without assistance, perhaps cannot afford to brew, from the heavy tax on malt, and the cost of utensils: the rich, who can indulge themselves in wine, and only wish to save trouble, order their beer from the brewer. The poor are served by the pot, from brewers'

public houses, which should be obliged to pay double duty for what they sell; the rich are supplied, by the cask, from the brewery. Thus, a wholesome beverage, and congenial to the constitution of the natives, if composed of malt and hops, as it ought, is exposed to every species of mercantile adulteration, and in consequence is suspected to be neither friendly to health nor to strength.

## Baking.

Well brewed, worth cost,  
 Ill used, half lost.

3. One bushel well brewed, outlasteth some twain,  
 And saveth both malt and expences in vain.
4. Too new is no profit, too stale is as bad,  
 Drink, dead or else sôur, makes labourer sad.

Remember, good Gill,  
 Take pain with thy swill.

Seething of  
 grains.

5. Seeth grains in more water, while grains be yet hot,  
 And stir them in copper, as porridge in pot.
6. Such, heating with straw, to have off all good store,  
 Both pleaseth and easeth, what would ye have more?

---

 ¶ BAKING <sup>1</sup>.
 

---

New bread is a drivell,  
 Much crust is as evil.

Baking.

1. New bread is a waster, but mouldy is worse,  
 What that way dog catcheth, that loseth the purse,
2. Much dough-bake I praise not, much crust is as ill,  
 The mean is the Huswife ; say nay, if ye will.

---

<sup>1</sup> These observations on baking use of the oven is happily not yet  
 are truisms. In farm-houses, the wholly neglected.

---

## I COOKERY.

---

Good cookery craveth ;

Good turn-broche saveth <sup>1</sup>.

1. Good cook to dress dinner, to bake and to brew,  
Deserveth a reward, being honest and true.
  2. Good diligent turn-broche, and trusty withall,  
Is sometime as needfull, as some in the hall.
- 

Cookery

## I DAIRY.

---

Good dairy doth pleasure :

Ill dairy spends treasure.

1. Good huswife in dairy, that needs not be told,  
Deserveth her fee, to be paid her in gold.
  2. Ill servant neglecting, what huswifery says,  
Deserveth her fee to be paid her with (a) bays.
- 

Dairy.

### VARIATION.

(a) in.

---

<sup>1</sup> The turn-broche, or turn-spit, was an useful assistant in the kitchen, before the invention of roasting-jacks. It appears from these lines, that the offices of baking and brewing were also delegated to the cook.

## Scouring.

Good droy worth much',  
Mark sluts and such.

3. Good droy to serve hog, to help wash, and to milk,  
More needfull is truly, than some in their silk.
4. Though homely be milker, let cleanly be cook,  
For slut and a sloven, be known by their look.

In dairy no cat,  
Lay bane for a rat.

- Traps for rats. 5. Though cat (a good mouser) doth dwell in a house,  
Yet ever in dairy, have trap for a mouse.
6. Take heed how thou layest the bane for the rats,  
For poisoning of (a) servant, thyself, and thy brats.

## SCOURING.

No scouring for pride :  
Spare kettle whole side.

- Scouring. 1. Though scouring be needfull, yet scouring too much,  
Is pride without profit, and robbeth (a) thine hutch.
2. Keep kettles from knocks, set tubs out of sun,  
For mending is costly, and crackt is soon done.

### VARIATIONS.

(a) wants of.

(a) rubbeth.

<sup>1</sup> *Droy*, spelt in some editions  
*droie*, is probably a corruption of  
*droile*, a scullion, kitchen-boy, or

servant of all work. Both words are  
now obsolete.



## ¶ WASHING.

---

TAKE heed when ye wash,  
Else run in the lash.

1. Maids, wash well, and wring well, but beat, ye wot how,  
If any lack beating, I fear it be you <sup>1</sup>.
2. In washing by hand, have an eye to thy boll,  
For launders and millers, be quick of their toll.

Dry sun, dry wind,  
Safe bind, safe find.

3. Go wash well, saith Summer, with sun I will dry;  
Go wring well, saith Winter, with wind so shall I.
4. To trust without heed, is to venture a joint,  
Give tale and take count, is a huswifely point.

Where many be packing,  
Are many things lacking.

5. Where hens fall a cackling, take heed to their nest,  
When drabs fall a whispering, take heed to the rest.
6. Through negligent huswives, are many things lacking.  
And Gillet suspected, will quickly be packing.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tusser inveighs against beating linen, which still, however, continues to be the practice in many parts of the kingdom, and, indeed, of the habitable globe. In some places, the feet are used; in others, the hands; and in others, on the contrary, a

beetle, or a flat board. Washing-machines are but partially employed: they have the prejudices of the *ladies of the tub* to contend with, whose influence in families is not inconsiderable.

## MALTING<sup>1</sup>.

ILL malting is theft ;  
Wood dried hath a weft.

Malting.

1. House may be so handsome, and skilfullness such,  
To make thy own malt, it shall profit thee much.
2. Some drieth with straw, and some drieth with wood ;  
Wood asketh more charge, and yet (*b c*) nothing so  
good.

Take heed to the kell,  
Sing out as a bell.

3. Be siür no chances, to fiør can draw,  
The wood, or the furzen, the brake, or the straw.
4. Let Gillet be singing, it doth very well,  
To keep her from sleeping, and burning the kell.

Best dry'd, best speeds :  
Ill kept, bowd breeds.

5. Malt being well speered, the more it will cast<sup>2</sup>,  
Malt being well dried, the longer will last.

### VARIATION.

(*b c*) *want yet.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Few, at this period, make their own malt. In the golden days of Tusser, excisemen were unknown. The cautions and directions, however, here given, are very good.

the more malt is grown or shot, the farther it will measure." *Speered*, which comes from the verb, *to spear*, is a term used in malting, to express growing.

<sup>2</sup> The sense seems to be "that

6. Long kept in ill sollar (undoubted thou shalt,) Through bowds without number, lose quickly thy malt.

## DINNER MATTERS.

For hunger or thirst,  
Serve cattle well first.

1. By noon, see your dinner be ready and neat<sup>1</sup>,  
Let meat tarry servant, not servant his meat.

Dinner time.

2. Plough-cattle, a baiting, call servant to dinner,  
The thicker together, the charges the thinner.

Together is best,  
For hostis and guest.

3. Due season is best, altogether is gay,  
Dispatch hath no fellow, make short and away.

4. Beware of Gill Laggoose disordering thy house,  
Mo dainties who catcheth, than crafty fed mouse!

<sup>1</sup> Among the peasantry, the alteration in the dinner hour, within the last three centuries, is less considerable than in many other points. If they do not dine exactly at noon,

they seldom exceed one o'clock. The higher ranks, who used to adopt the same plan, have, however, reversed the order of meals, and *dine* when their ancestors used to sup.

## Dinner Batters.

Let such have enough,  
That follow the plough.

5. Give servant no dainties, but give him enough,  
Too many chaps walking do beggar the plough<sup>1</sup>.
6. Poor seggons, halfstarved, work faintly and dull,  
And lubbers do loiter, their bellies too (a) full.

Give never too much,  
To lazy, and such.

7. Feed lazy, that thresheth, a flap and a tap,  
Like slothfull, that alway be stopping a gap.
8. Some litherly lubber, more eateth than two,  
Yet leaveth undone, what another will do.

Where nothing will last,  
Spare such as thou hast.

9. Some cutteth thy linen, some spoileth thy broth,  
Bare table to some, doth as well as a cloth.
10. Treen dishes be homely, and yet not to lack,  
Where stone is no laster, take tankard and jack.

---

VARIATION.

(a) to.

---

<sup>1</sup> Though all the standard editions read, "chaps walking," may it not be a misprint for *chaps wagging*, that is, mouths craving? At present,

not less than formerly, plowing is performed at a great, and in many counties, an unnecessary expense.

Knap boy on the thumbs,  
And save him his crumbs.

11. That pewter is never for mannerly feasts (*a*),  
That daily do serve so unmannerly beasts (*a*).
12. Some gnaweth and leaveth, some crusts and some  
crumbs,  
Eat such their own leavings, or gnaw their own  
thumbs.

Serve God ever first ;  
Take nothing at worst.

12. At dinner, at supper, at morning, at night,  
Give thanks unto God, for his gifts so in sight <sup>1</sup>.

Grace before  
and after  
meat.

14. Good husband and huswife will sometimes, alone,  
Make shift with a morsell, and pick of a bone.

Enough thou art told ;  
Too much will not hold.

15. Three dishes well dressed, and welcome with all,  
Both pleaseth thy friend, and becometh thine hall.
16. Enough is a plenty, too much is a pride,  
The plough, with ill holding, goes quickly aside.

## VARIATIONS.

(*a*) feast.

(*a*) doth serve an unmannerly beast.

---

<sup>1</sup> The principles of religion seem to have been deeply rooted in the mind of Tusser ; and the advice which he gives in this distich, of constantly acknowledging a dependence on the Almighty, is the most effec-

tual way to promote even our temporal interest. Our domestics and dependants will thus be taught to act from higher motives than those of fear of man.

---

## ¶ AFTERNOON WORKS.

---

MAKE company break ;  
Go cherish the weak.

Afternoon  
works.

1. When dinner is ended, set servant to work,  
And follow such fellows (*a*), as loveth to lurk.
2. To servant in sickness, see nothing ye grutch <sup>1</sup>,  
A thing of a trifle shall comfort him much.

Who many do feed,  
Save much they had need.

3. Put chippings in dippings, use parings to save,  
Fat capons or chickens, that lookest to have.
4. Save drippings and skimmings, how ever ye do,  
For med'cine for cattle, for cart, and for shoe.

Leave capon unmeet,  
Dear fed is unsweet,

5. Such off (*a*) corn as cometh, give wife to her fee <sup>2</sup>,  
Feed willingly such as do help to feed thee.
- 

### VARIATIONS.

(*a*) merchants.

(*a*) of.

---

<sup>1</sup> The humanity of this maxim does credit to the heart of the writer. Though he strongly recommends œconomy, it is only that a person may have wherewithal to do good, and to be liberal on proper occasions.

<sup>2</sup> The obvious meaning is *offal* corn. Though "of corn," is used in the three standard editions, I have adopted *off* from some of the later impressions—*of* and *off* being frequently confounded in the former.

6. Though fat fed is dainty, yet (a) this I thee warn,  
Be cunning in fattening, for robbing thy barn.

Piece hole to defend ;  
Things timely amend.

7. Good sempsters be sewing of fine pretty knacks,  
Good huswives be mending, and piecing their sacks.

8. Though making and mending be huswifely ways,  
Yet mending in time, is the huswife to praise.

Buy new as is meet,  
Mark blanket and sheet.

9. Though ladies may rend, and buy new every day,  
Good huswives must mend, and buy new as they may.

10. Call quarterly servants to court and to leet<sup>1</sup> ;  
Write every coverlid, blanket, and sheet.

Shift slovenly elf,  
Be jailor thyself.

11. Though shifting too oft, be a thief in a house,  
Yet shift slut and sloven, for fear of a louse.

12. Grant Doubtfull no key of his chamber in purse,  
Lest chamber door lockt, be to thievery a nurse.

---

## VARIATION.

(a) of this.

---

<sup>1</sup> Exercise all due vigilance over servants with whose principles and conduct you are not perfectly acquainted, and "call them to court and to leet," or in other words, to account; by convincing them that you will not suffer yourself to be cheated or imposed on.



## Evening Works.

Save feathers for guest,  
These other rob chest.

Save feathers. 13. Save wing for a thresher, when gander doth die <sup>1</sup>,  
Save feathers (*a b*) of all thing, the softer to lie.

14. Much spice is a thief, so is candle and fier,  
Sweet sauce is as crafty, as ever was frier.

Wife, make thine (*a*) own candle,  
Spare penny to handle.

Candle-making. 15. Provide for thy tallow, ere frost cometh in,  
And make thine own candle, ere winter begin.

16. If penny for all thing, be suffered to trudge,  
Trust long not to penny, to have him thy drudge.

## I EVENING WORKS.

TIME drawing to night,  
See all things go right.

Evening Works. 1. When hens go to roost, go in hand to dress meat <sup>2</sup>,  
Serve hogs, and to milking, and some to serve neat.

### VARIATIONS.

(*a b*) feather.

(*a*) thy.

<sup>1</sup> "A thresher," spelt *thressher* in the edition of 1573, is evidently in this place taken for a *duster* of furniture, for which purpose the wing of a goose is still in use.

<sup>2</sup> As hens go to roost early, it is recommended to take them as a warning to prepare for supper, and to dispatch the remaining diurnal avocations of the farm-house

2. Where twain be enow, be not served with three,  
More knaves in a company, worser they be.

Make lackey to trudge,  
Make servant thy drudge.

3. For every trifle leave jaunting thy nag,  
But rather make lackey of Jack-boy, thy wag.

4. Make servant at night lug in wood or a log,  
Let none come in empty, but slut and thy dog.

False knave ready prest,  
All safe is the best.

5. Where pullen use nightly to perch in the yard,  
There two-legged foxes keep watches and ward.

6. See cattle well served, without and within,  
And all things (*a b*) at quiet, ere supper begin.

Take heed, it is needfull,  
True pity is meedfull.

7. No clothes in garden, no trinkets without,  
No door leave, unbolted, for fear of a doubt.

8. Thou woman, whom pity becometh the best,  
Grant all that hath laboured time to take rest.

---

VARIATION.

(*a b*) thing.

---

## ¶ SUPPER MATTERS<sup>1</sup>.

---

USE mirth and good word,  
At bed and at board.

Supper-time  
huswifery.

1. Provide for thy husband, to make him good cheer,  
Make merry together, while time ye be here.
2. At bed and at board, howsoever befall,  
Whatever God sendeth, be merry withall.

No brawling make,  
No jealousy take.

3. No taunts before servants, for hindering of fame,  
No jarring too loud, for avoiding of shame.
4. As frensy and heresy roveth together,  
So jealousy leadeth a fool, ye wot whither.

Tend such as ye have,  
Stop talkative knave.

5. Young children and chickens would ever be eating,  
Good servants look duly for gentle entreating.
6. No servant at table, use sauc'ly to talk,  
Lest tongue set at large, out of measure do walk.

No snatching at all,  
Sirs, hearken now all.

---

<sup>1</sup> How much would domestic maxims in this section; nor would peace and harmony be promoted by the practice of the four last be less the observance of the four first conducive to profit than to pleasure.

7. No lurching, no snatching, no striving at all ;  
Lest one go without, and another have all.
8. Declare after supper—take heed thereunto,  
What work in the morning, each servant shall do.

---

## ‘ AFTER-SUPPER MATTERS ’.

---

THY soul hath a clog ;  
Forget not thy dog.

1. Remember those children, whose parents be poor,  
Which hunger, yet dare not to crave at thy door.
2. Thy bandog, that serveth for divers mishaps,  
Forget not to give him thy bones and thy scraps.

Works after  
supper.

Make keys to be keepers,  
To bed, ye sleepers.

3. Where mouths be many, to spend that thou hast,  
Set keys to be keepers, for spending too (a) fast.

---

### VARIATION.

(a) to.

---

‘ Having gone through the duties and the business of the day, our author concludes with such maxims and admonitions, religious, moral, and prudential, as are adapted to all stations. To the wedded mistress of a family, the closing stanza ought to be an invariable rule of action :

it is the charm that never fails, the spell that cannot be broken.

Be lowly, not sullen, if aught go amiss,

What wresting may lose thee, that win with a kiss, &c.

## After-Supper Matters.

4. To bed after supper, let drowsy go sleep,  
Lest knave in the dark, to his marrow do creep.

Keep keys as thy life ;

Fear candle, good wife.

5. Such keys lay up safe, ere ye take ye to rest,  
Of dairy, of buttery, of cupboard and chest.
6. Fear candle in hayloft, in barn, and in shed,  
Fear flea-smock and mendbreech, for burning their  
bed.

See door lockt fast,

Two keys make wast.

7. A door without lock, is a bait for a knave,  
A lock without key, is a fool that will have.
8. One key to two locks, if it break is a grief ;  
Two keys to one lock, in the end is a thief.

Night-works trouble head,

Lock doors, and to bed.

9. The day willeth done, whatsoever ye bid,  
The night is a thief, if ye take not good heed.
10. Wash dishes, lay leavens, save fire, and away,  
Lock doors and to bed, a good huswife will say.

To bed know thy guise,

To rise do likewise.

- Bed-time. 11. In winter at nine, and in summer at ten,  
To bed after supper, both maidens and men.

12. In winter, at five a clock, servant arise,  
In summer at four, is very good guise.

Time to rise.

Love so as ye may

Love many a day.

13. Be lowly, not sullen, if aught (*b c*) go amiss,  
What wresting may lose thee, that win with a kiss.
14. Both bear and forbear, now and then as ye may,  
Then wench, God a mercy ! thy husband will say.

---

VARIATION.

(*a b*) ought.

---

## THE PLOUGHMAN'S FEASTING DAYS<sup>1</sup>.

THIS would not be slipt (*a b*),  
Old guise must be kept.

1. Good huswives, whom God hath enriched enough<sup>2</sup>,  
Forget not the feasts, that belong to the plough :  
The meaning is only to joy and be glad,  
For comfort with labour, is fit to be had.

### PLOUGH MONDAY<sup>3</sup>.

Leicestershire.

2. Plough Monday, next after that Twelfth-tide is past,  
Bids out with the plough, the worst husband is last :  
If ploughman get hatchet, or whip to the screen,  
Maids loseth their cock, if no water be seen.

#### VARIATION.

(*a b*) slept: probably for rhyme's sake.

<sup>1</sup> Though popery was legally abolished at the period when this was written; yet protestants did not think it necessary, as a pledge of their reformation, to renounce those festive or fasting-days, which it had either recommended or tolerated. Among the former, the ploughman's feast days seem to have been only observed, either partially or generally, throughout most parts of England, in our author's time; and in recommending "old guise to be

kept," he certainly, in this respect at least, did not deviate from his protestant creed.

<sup>2</sup> Pronounced *enow*, *plow*, as in several other places.

<sup>3</sup> Till after Twelfth-day, very little country business of any kind used to be carried on. Feasting and visiting filled up the period between Christmas and that day, which was always observed with due solemnities. Plough Monday, which speedily followed, was to remind the



## SHROVETIDE<sup>1</sup>.

3. At Shrovetide to shroving, go thresh the fat hen,  
If blindfold can kill her, then give it thy men.  
Maids, fritters and pancakes, enow see ye make,  
Let slut have one pancake, for company sake.

Essex and  
Suffolk.

## SHEEP-SHEARING<sup>2</sup>.

4. Wife, make us a dinner, spare flesh neither corn,  
Make wafers and cakes, for our sheep must be shorn,  
At sheep-shearing, neighbours none other thing crave,  
But good cheer and welcome, like neighbours to have.

Northamp-  
tonshire.

cultivators of the earth of their proper business ; and a spring was given to the activity of domestics, by some peculiar observances. The men and maid servants strove to outvie each other in early rising, on Plough Monday. If the ploughman could get any of the implements of his vocation by the fire-side, before the maid could put on her kettle, she forfeited her shrovetide cock. The evening concluded with a good supper.

<sup>1</sup> The custom alluded to in this stanza is now probably quite obsolete. I describe it on the authority of Hilman, who seems to have witnessed its celebration. "The hen is hung at a fellow's back, who has also some horse-bells about him ; the rest of the fellows are blinded, and have boughs in their hands, with which they chase this fellow and his hen, about some large court or small enclosure. The fellow with

his hen and bells shifting as well as he can, they follow the sound, and sometimes hit him and his hen ; other times, if he can get behind one of them, they thresh one another well favour'dly ; but the jest is, the maids are to blind the fellows, which they do with their aprons, and the cunning baggages will endeavour their sweethearts with a peeping-hole, whilst the others look out as sharp to hinder it. After this, the hen is boiled with bacon ; and store of pancakes and fritters are made. She that is noted for lying a-bed long, or any other miscarriage, hath the first pancake presented to her, which most commonly falls to the dog's share at last, for no one will own it their due. Thus youth were encouraged, shamed, and feasted with very little cost, and always their feasts were accompanied with exercise."

<sup>2</sup> This still, and most deservedly,

# The Ploughman's Feasting Days.

## THE WAKE-DAY <sup>1</sup>.

Leicester-  
shire.

5. Fill oven with flawns, Jenny, pass not for sleep,  
To-morrow, thy father his wake-day will keep.  
Then every wanton may dance at her will,  
Both Tomkin with Tomlin, and Jenkin with Gill.

## HARVEST-HOME <sup>2</sup>.

6. For all this good feasting, yet art thou not loose,  
Till ploughman thou givest his harvest-home goose.  
Though goose go in stubble, I pass not for that,  
Let goose have a goose, be she lean, be she fat.

a day of festivity in most counties. After the business of shearing is performed, the farmer gives an entertainment, at which not only the shearers attend, but such of his friends as he may think proper to invite.

<sup>1</sup> On the night preceding the day of the dedication of the parish church, which is always identified with some saint in the Romish calendar at least, the young parishioners used to watch in the church till morning, and to feast the next day. This practice was likely to lead to irregularities, and was properly changed to waking at the oven, in each particular house. By degrees too, this custom has dropt into oblivion; but in many parts of the kingdom, the festivities commence on the Sunday nearest the saint's day to whom the church is dedicated, and are kept up for some

days after; not unfrequently for a week. The farmers then keep a kind of open house; and beef, plum-pudding, and beer, are supplied to successive visitors, who usually return the compliment in their respective parishes. These feasts or wakes are generally confined to the summer months, and are seasons of joy to some, and of expense to others. Occasional relaxation, however, is necessary for all ranks; and the peasantry, who have few other opportunities for public intercourse, make themselves as happy as the frequenters of plays, balls, and concerts.

<sup>2</sup> It appears that a goose used formerly to be given at harvest-home, to those who had not overturned a load of corn, in carrying, during harvest. Thus the shame of privation before his equals, was wisely superadded to the sense of

## SEED-CAKE<sup>1</sup>.

7. Wife, some time this week, if the weather hold clear, Essex and Suffolk.  
 An end of wheat sowing we make for this year :  
 Remember thou therefore, though I do it not,  
 The seed-cake, the pasties, and furmenty pot.

## TWICE A-WEEK ROAST<sup>2</sup>.

8. Good plowmen look weekly, of custom and right,  
 For roast meat on Sundays, and Thursdays at night.  
 Thus doing and keeping such custom and guise,  
 They call thee good huswife,—they love thee likewise.

duty, in order to induce carefulness. We have lost the principle, but the practice of a good supper on finishing harvest is still continued, and no occasion can be more proper. The labourer by anticipation long enjoys the coming entertainment, and toils to deserve it: the farmer, having got in his crop, and secured it from the weather, is called upon by every tie of gratitude, to make those happy who have contributed to his safety and his gain.

<sup>1</sup> The conclusion of seed-time used likewise to be celebrated by its appropriate entertainment; and, though generally discontinued, perhaps is not yet wholly obsolete.

<sup>2</sup> It is to be feared that the custom of giving roast meat on Sundays, and on Thursday nights, is now wholly laid aside. It might, indeed,

be consistent with ancient hospitality, which cost comparatively little; but it would be too much to be expected from modern farmers, whose rent is the smallest portion of their outgoings. The introduction of foreign luxuries too has diminished the customary largesses of persons of property. No man, whatever might be his fortune, could afford to entertain in the modern style, the numbers which were frequently feasted by our nobility and gentry, in former times. The most liberal are now obliged to confine their bounty to their more immediate dependants; and, in thousands of parishes, even a Christmas dinner from a squire or a lord, would furnish a newspaper paragraph, for its rarity.

## ¶ THE GOOD HUSWIFELY PHYSIC<sup>1</sup>.

Good huswives provide, ere an' sickness do come,  
 Of sundry good things, in her house to have some :  
 Good *aqua composita*, and vinegar tart,  
 Rose-water, and treacle, to comfort the (c) heart.  
 Cold herbs in her garden, for agues that burn,  
 That over strong heat, to good temper may turn,  
 White endive and succory, with spinage enough,  
 All such, with good pot herbs, should follow the plough.  
 Get water of fumitory, liver to cool,  
 And others the like, or else go (b c) like a fool.  
 Conserves of barberry, quinces, and such,  
 With sirops, that caseth the sickly so much.

Physician.

Ask *Medicus* counsel, ere med'cine ye make,  
 And honour that man for necessity's sake.  
 Though thousands hate physic, because of the cost,  
 Yet thousands it helpeth, that else should be lost.

### VARIATIONS.

(c) thine.

(b c) lie.

<sup>1</sup> Though powerful medicines should never be administered, except by professional men, certain simple remedies ought to be kept in every family; not, indeed, such as are here enumerated, but such as improved medical knowledge has shewn to be equally safe and effica-

cious. The list, however, is curious as an evidence of the state of domestic medicine in the sixteenth century; and the advice which follows proves the good sense and piety of the writer, which, indeed, are universally conspicuous in his works.

Good broth and good keeping do much, now and than,  
 Good diet with wisdom, best comforteth man.  
 In health, to be stirring, shall profit thee best ;  
 In sickness hate trouble, seek quiet and rest.  
 Remember thy soul, let no fancy prevail,  
 Make ready to God-ward, let faith never quail.  
 The sooner thyself thou submittest to God,  
 The sooner he ceaseth, to scourge with his rod.

Good diet.

Think on thy  
 soul, and have  
 a good hope.

---

¶ (a b) GOOD MOTHERLY NURSERY.

---

Good huswives take pain, and do count it good luck,  
 To make their own breast their own child to give suck <sup>1</sup>.  
 Though wrauling and rocking, be noisome so near,  
 Yet lost by ill nursing, is worser to hear.  
 But one thing I warn thee, let huswife be nurse,  
 Lest husbaud do find thee, too (a) frank with his purse.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a b) The.

(a) to.

<sup>1</sup> It has uniformly been the object of all good and wise men, to enforce on mothers the propriety and advantage of nursing their own children, and of educating them in their tender years. On mothers, not only the manners, but even the constitution of their offspring will materially depend. To render them hardy, to chastise the froward, or, as

it is here expressed, "to give rope-ripe a twig," to initiate them in the first principles of learning, and of moral and religious duty, are peculiarly the province of the mother of a family. Whether the modern system of education, however, is favourable to those important ends, must be left to the unbiassed decision of the public.

## Think on the Poor.

What Hilback and Filbelly maketh away,  
 That help to make good, or else look for a fray.  
 Give child that is fitly, give baby the big,  
 Give hardness to youth, and to rope-ripe a twig.  
 We find it not spoken so often for naught,  
 That children were better unborn than untaught.  
 Some cockneys with cocking, are made very fools <sup>1</sup>,  
 Fit neither for 'prentice, for plough, nor for schools.  
 Teach child to ask blessing, serve God, and to church,  
 Then bless as a mother, else bless him with birch.  
 Thou huswife thus doing, what further shall need ?  
 But all men to call thee good mother indeed.

---

### I THINK ON THE POOR <sup>2</sup>.

---

REMEMBER the poor, that for God's sake do call.  
 For God both rewardeth and blesseth withall.  
 Take this in good part, whatsoever thou be,  
 And wish me no worse, than I wish unto thee.

---

<sup>1</sup> A *cockney*, the derivation of which word has been much disputed, appears to me clearly to come from the verb *to cocker*, or *cock*, by contraction, as in this passage. A *cockney*, therefore, is one who has been brought up effeminately, and spoilt by indulgence, whether a native of the city or the country.

<sup>2</sup> This short but impressive lesson will find its echo in every benevolent heart.

---



## ¶ A COMPARISON BETWEEN GOOD HUSWIFERY AND EVIL<sup>1</sup>.

Comparing together good huswife with bad,  
The knowledge of either, the better is had.

1. ILL huswifery lieth  
Till nine of the clock :  
Good huswifery trieth,  
To rise with the cock.
2. Ill huswifery tooteth,  
To make herself brave :  
Good huswifery looketh  
What houshold must have.
3. Ill huswifery trusteth,  
To him and to her :  
Good huswifery lusteth  
Herself for to stir.
4. Ill huswifery careth,  
For this nor for that :  
Good huswifery spareth,  
For fear, ye wot what.

---

<sup>1</sup> In chapter LII. of the first part of this work, we have a comparison between good and bad husbandry ; and we are here presented with a contrast between good and bad huswifery, on which no particular remarks are necessary.



## A Comparison between

5. Ill huswifery pricketh,  
Herself up in pride :  
Good huswifery tricketh,  
Her house as a bride.
  
6. Ill huswifery one (*b c*) thing  
Or other must crave :  
Good huswifery nothing,  
But needfull will have.
  
7. Ill huswifery moveth,  
With gossip to spend :  
Good huswifery loveth  
Her household to tend.
  
8. Ill huswifery wanteth,  
With spending too fast :  
Good huswifery canteth (*a*)  
The longer to last.
  
9. Ill huswifery easeth  
Herself with unknown :  
Good huswifery pleaseth  
Herself with her own.
  
10. Ill huswifery brooketh  
Mad toys in her head :  
Good huswifery looketh,  
That all things be fed.

---

VARIATIONS.
(*b c*) o'thing.(*a*) franteth.

11. Ill huswifery bringeth,  
A shilling to naught :  
Good huswifery singeth—  
Her coffers full fraught.
12. Ill huswifery rendeth,  
And casteth aside :  
Good huswifery mendeth,  
Else would it go wide.
13. Ill huswifery sweepeth,  
Her linen to gage :  
Good huswifery keepeth,  
To serve her in age.
14. Ill huswifery craveth,  
In secret to borrow ;  
Good huswifery saveth  
To-day, for to-morrow.
15. Ill huswifery pineth,  
(Not having to eat)  
Good huswifery dineth,  
With plenty of meat.
16. Ill huswifery letteth  
The devil take all :  
Good huswifery setteth  
Good brag of a small.

Good huswife good fame hath, of best in the town ;  
Ill huswife ill name bath, of every clown.

Thus endeth the Book of Huswifery.

---

## For Men a perfect Warning, What Child shall come by Learning.

---

1. ALL you that fain would learn the perfect way,  
To have your child, in music something seen<sup>1</sup>;  
Ask Nature first, what thereto she doth say,  
Ere further suit ye make to such a queen:  
For doubtless (*grossum caput*) is not he,  
Of whom the learned Muses, seen will be.
  
2. Once tried, that Nature, trim, hath done her part,  
And lady Music, far in love withall,  
Be wise, who first doth teach thy child that art,  
Lest homely breaker mar fine ambling Ball.  
Not rode in mad brains hand, is that can help,  
But gentle skill doth make the proper whelp.

<sup>1</sup> It is natural for men to fix a high value on what has cost them time and trouble. As a practical musician himself, Tusser seems to consider music, for such as have an ear, as a proper branch of education. For boys, it certainly would be degrading, except as a profession; and even for girls, however fashionable it may be, it is generally worse than useless, as it occupies that time which ought to be devoted to much more important purposes.

The observations, however, on the art of teaching, generally, are most excellent, "Skill mixed with will,

is he that teacheth best," in the third stanza, and the following lines in the fifth,—

"Yet cocking dams, and shifting  
dads from schools,  
Make pregnant wits to prove un-  
learned fools,"

deserve to be deeply impressed on the minds of fathers and mothers. The foolishly fond indulgence of the one, and the caprice of the other, in removing their children from one school to another, make or confirm many a dunce.

3. Where choice is hard, count good for well a fine,  
Skill, mixt with will, is he that teacheth best ;  
Let this suffice for teaching child of thine,  
Chuse quickly well, for all the lingering rest.  
Mistaught at first, how seldom proveth well ?  
Trim taught (O God) how shortly doth excell ?
4. Although as ships, must tarry wind and tide,  
And perfect hours, abide their stinted time :  
So likewise, though of learning daily tri'd,  
Space, must be had, ere wit may thereto climb ;  
Yet easy steps and perfect way to trust,  
Doth cause good speed, confess of force we must.
5. Thus in the child, though wit enough we find,  
And teacher good, near hand, or other where ;  
And time as apt, as may be thought with mind,  
Nor cause in such thing much to doubt or fear :  
Yet cocking Mams, and shifting Dads from schools,  
Make pregnant wits, to prove unlearned fools.
6. Ere learning come, to have, first art thou taught,  
Apt learning child, apt time that thing to frame ;  
Apt cunning man to teach, else all is naught,  
Apt parents, glad to bring to pass the same.  
On such apt ground, the Muses love to build,  
This lesson learn :—adieu else, learned child (a).

VARIATION.

(a) The Sonnet to Lady Paget, which follows the *Posies*,  
is placed before the *Description*, &c.

# THE DESCRIPTION OF A WOMAN'S AGE,

BY SIX TIMES FOURTEEN YEARS 'PRENTICESHIP,

WITH A LESSON TO THE SAME<sup>1</sup>.

- 
14. Two first seven years, for a rod they do whine,  
 28. Two next as a pearl in the world they do shine.  
 42. Two next trim beauty beginneth to swerve,  
 56. Two next for matrons or drudges they serve.  
 70. Two next doth crave a staff for a stay,  
 84. Two next a bier to fetch them away.

## A LESSON.

Then purchase some pelf,  
 By fifty and three :  
 Or buckle thyself,  
 A drudge for to be.

---

<sup>1</sup> As Tusser had divided Man's age into apprenticeship of seven years, he probably thought it proper to pay his respects, somewhat in a similar manner, to the ladies.

He certainly has not drawn a very flattering picture ; and in allowing the reign of beauty to last only fourteen years, he has evinced too fastidious a taste. But *de gustibus, &c.*

---

## THE INHOLDER'S POSY (a) <sup>1</sup>.

---

AT meals, my friend, who vict'leth here, and sitteth with  
his host,  
Shall both be sure of better cheer, and 'scape with lesser cost.

But he that will attendance have, a chamber to himself,  
Must more regard what pains do crave, than pass of  
worldly pelf.

Let no man look to purchase Lynn, with pinching by the  
way <sup>2</sup>,  
But lay before he takes his inn, to make his purse to pay.

For nothing pay and nothing pray, in inn it is the guise;  
Where no point gain, there no point pain, think this if you  
be wise.

---

### VARIATION.

(a) Wanting; and "Certain Table Lessons," and "Table Lessons for Waiting Servants," placed last.

---

<sup>1</sup> As a proof that posies or inscriptions were not confined to this country, Warton, in his History of English Poetry, refers us to a work translated from the Italian in 1584, black letter, intitled "The Wel-spring of wittie Conceights." Those

with which Tusser has favoured us, are all more remarkable for their good sense than for their fine poetry.

<sup>2</sup> "To purchase Lynn," by petty savings, seems to have been a proverbial mode of expression, used in ridicule of stinginess.

## Certain Table Lessons.

For toiling much, and spoiling much, great charge, small  
gains or none,  
Soon sets thine host at Needham's shore, to crave the beg-  
gar's bone<sup>1</sup>.

Foreseeing this, come day or night, take up what place ye  
please,  
Use mine as thine, let Fortune spite, and boldly take thine  
case.

---

### ¶ CERTAIN TABLE LESSONS<sup>2</sup>.

- 
1. FRIEND, eat less, and drink less, and buy thee a  
knife,  
Else look for a carver, not always too rife.  
Some, kniveless, their daggers for bravery wear<sup>3</sup>,  
That often for surfeiting, need not to fear.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Needham's shore," is a pun-  
ning proverb recorded in Ray; and  
signifies that waste and extravagance  
bring a man to want or need.  
Needham is a market-town of Suf-  
folk.

<sup>2</sup> The propriety of these Table  
Lessons is pretty obvious. They  
may be adopted, as far as modern

manners allow, without reserve.

<sup>3</sup> It appears that there were  
braggadocios and coxcombs, for-  
merly as well as now; and that when  
knives were not laid for the guests,  
as at the present period, they would  
use their daggers to carve with,  
which were harmless as to any other  
purpose.



2. At dinner and supper, the table doth crave,  
Good fellowly neighbour, good manners (*a b*) to have.  
Advise thee well therefore, ere tongue be too free,  
Or slap sauce be noted, too saucy to be.
3. If any thing wanteth, or seemeth amiss,  
To call for, or shew it, good manner it is ;  
But busy fault-finder, and saucy withall,  
Is roister (*c*) like ruffian, no manner at all.
4. Some cutteth the napkin, some trenchers will nick ;  
Some sheweth like folly, in many a trick :  
Let such apeish body (*a*), so toying at meat,  
Go toy with his noddie-like ape in the street <sup>1</sup>.
5. Some cometh unsent for, not for thy good cheer,  
But sent as a spiall, to listen and hear ;  
Which being once known, for a knave let him go ;  
For knave will be knavish, his nature is so.

VARIATIONS.

(*a b*) manner.

(*c*) roisting.

(*a*) let apishly body.

<sup>1</sup> There is a confusion in this line for want of correct punctuation, as is common in many other passages. In the edition of 1573, the reading is, "Go toy with his noddie, with ape in the street." In those of 1580 and 1585, we find, "Go toy with his noddie, like ape in the sheet." The meaning is clearly as I have

pointed it ; and I have since discovered that in some of the more recent editions the same punctuation is adopted, though in very few instances, indeed, have they elucidated the author in this respect ; but, on the contrary, have generally obscured his sense, or wholly perverted it.

## 1 LESSONS FOR WAITING SERVANTS.

1. ONE diligent serviture, skilfull to wait<sup>1</sup>,  
More comelieth thy table, than other some eight,  
That stand for to listen, or gazing about,  
Not minding their duty, within or without.
2. Such waiter is faulty, that standeth so by,  
Unmindfull of service, forgetting his eye :  
If master to such give a bone for to gnaw,  
He doth but his office to teach such a daw.
3. Such serviture, also, deserveth a check,  
That runneth out fisking, with meat in his beck :  
Such ravening puttocks for victuals so trim,  
Would have a good master, to puttock with him.
4. Who daily can suffer, or else can afford,  
His meat, so upsnatched, that comes from his board ?  
So teased (*b c*) with cormorants, here and there some,  
And others to want it that orderly come.

---

### VARIATION.

(*b c*) tossed.

---

<sup>1</sup> To those who keep a large retinue of useless servants, this maxim may be properly recommended. One attendant, duly qualified, will do more credit, or, in our author's

words "more comely the table," than several, who are either ignorant or inattentive to their duty. The faults of bad servants are well discriminated in the remaining stanzas.

5. Good serviture weigheth (once dinner begun)  
 What asketh attendance, and what to be done :  
 So purchasing master a praise with the best,  
 Gets praise to himself, both of master and guest.

---

¶ HUSBANDLY POSIES FOR THE HALL<sup>1</sup>.

---

1. FRIEND, here I dwell, and here I have a little world-  
 ly pelf,  
 Which on my friend I keep to spend, as well as on  
 myself.
2. Whatever fare you hap to find, take welcome for the  
 best,  
 That having then, disdain thou not, for wanting of  
 the rest.
3. Backbiting talk, that flattering blabs, know wily how  
 to blenge,  
 The wise doth note, the friend (c) doth hate, the  
 en'my will revenge.

---

VARIATIONS.

(c) fiend.

---

<sup>1</sup> These maxims are uniformly just. The last is worth a volume. The man who fears God, and conforms to the laws which religion prescribes, will find comfort and satisfaction in a moderate competence; while vice united to profligacy will be no protection from distress.

## Posies for the Parlour.

4. The wise will spend, or give or lend, yet keep to have  
in store,  
If fools may have from hand to mouth, they pass upon  
no more.
5. Where ease is sought, at length we see, that plenty  
waxeth scant,  
Who careless live, go borrow must, or else full often  
want.
6. The world doth think the wealthy man, is he that least  
shall need,  
But true it is, the godly man, is he that best shall speed.

---

## ¶ POSIES FOR THE PARLOUR.

---

1. As hatred is the serpent's noisome rod ;  
So friendship is the loving gift of God.
2. The drunken friend is friendship very evil ;  
The frantic friend is friendship for the devil.
3. The quiet friend, all one in word and deed,  
Great comfort is, like ready gold at need.
4. With brawling fools, that wraul for every wrong,  
Firm friendship never can continue long.

---

<sup>1</sup> The delineations of friends and of friendship are perfectly correct, and adapted to all times and circumstances. With his usual piety,

the author, in the concluding couplet, directs to a friend that will never disappoint nor deceive.

5. In time that man shall seldom friendship miss,  
That weigh'th what thing, touch kept in friendship is.
6. Oft times a friend is got with easy cost,  
Which used evil is as quickly lost.
7. Hast thou a friend, as heart may wish at will ?  
Then use him so, to have his friendship still.
8. Would'st have a friend, would'st know what friend is  
best ?  
Have God thy friend, who passeth all the rest.

---

¶ POSIES FOR THE GUEST'S CHAMBER<sup>1</sup>.

1. THE sloven and the careless man, the roynish nothing  
nice,  
To lodge in chamber, comely deckt, are seldom suf-  
fered twice.
2. With curtain some make scabbard clean, with cover-  
lid their shoe,  
All dirt and mire, some wallow bed, as spaniels use  
to do.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is evident from these inscrip-  
tions, that delicacy was little known  
at the period referred to. Few

guests of the present day would  
think of using a friend's house, with  
so little ceremony.

## Posies for the Guest's Chamber.

3. Though boots and spurs be ne'er so foul, what passeth  
some thereon,  
What place they foul, what (c) thing they tear, by  
tumbling thereupon.
4. Foul male some cast on fair board, be carpet ne'er so  
clean,  
What manners careless master hath, by knave his man  
is seen.
5. Some make the chimney chamber-pot, to smell like  
filthy sink,  
Yet who so bold, so soon to say, faugh ! how these  
houses stink ?
6. They therefore such, as make no force, what comely  
thing they spill,  
Must have a cabin like themselves, although against  
their will.
7. But gentlemen will gently do, where gentleness is  
shew'd  
Observing this, with love abide, or else hence all  
beshrew'd.

---

VARIATION.

(c) or.

---

## ¶ POSIES FOR THINE OWN BED- CHAMBER <sup>1</sup>.

---

1. WHAT wisdom more, what better life, than pleaseth  
God to send,  
What worldly goods, what longer use, than pleaseth  
God to lend.
2. What better fare, than well content, agreeing with thy  
wealth,  
What better guest than trusty friend, in sickness and  
in health ?
3. What better bed than conscience good, to pass the  
night with sleep,  
What better work, than daily care, from sin thyself to  
keep ?
4. What better thought, than think on God, and daily  
him to serve,  
What better gift than to the poor, that ready be to  
sterve ?

---

<sup>1</sup> Content and a good conscience, as they are the principal supports in adversity, so they endear prosperity. To have these rules of action and thinking constantly in the mind's

eye, will give more delight under the vicissitudes of human life, than the most costly furniture, and beds of down.



## A Sonnet to the Lady Paget.

5. What greater praise of God and man, than mercy for  
to shew (*a*),  
Who merciless, shall mercy find, that mercy shews to  
few?
6. What worse despair, than loth to die, for fear to go  
to hell?  
What greater faith than trust in God, through Christ  
in heaven to dwell?
- 

## A SONNET TO THE LADY PAGET

---

SOME pleasures take,  
And cannot give,  
But only make,  
Poor thanks their shift :  
Some meaning well,  
In debt do live,  
And cannot tell,  
Where else to shift.

Some knock, and fain  
Would ope the door,  
To learn the vain,  
Good turn to praise :

---

### VARIATION.

(*a*) ————— than hatred to forsake,  
What merciless shall mercy get, that mercy none will take?

Some shew good face,  
 And be but poor ;  
 Yet have a grace  
 Good fame to raise.

Some owe and give,  
 Yet still in debt,  
 And so must live,  
 For aught I know :  
 Some wish to pay,  
 And cannot get ;  
 But night and day,  
 Must still more owe.

Even so must I, for service past,  
 Still wish you good, while life doth last.

---

## PRINCIPAL POINTS OF RELIGION.

---

1. To pray to God continually,
2. To learn to know him rightfully,

---

<sup>1</sup> In these, and in the " Author's Belief," we find nothing contrary to the doctrines of the Reformed Church. Yet Tusser's first patron, William Lord Paget, had, under the reign of Mary at least, shewn much zeal for popery, and his son Thomas was entirely devoted to that religion. Of the sincerity of our author, there can be no reason to doubt; though, either out of respect to the

prejudices of his friends, or perhaps from the higher principle of Christian charity, he passes no reflections on the modes of faith which had, till lately, universally prevailed. What he says of saints, that " more good is done resembling them, than shewing them our complaints," will not be denied, either by Catholic or Protestant.

## Principal Points of Religion.

3. To honour God in Trinity,  
The Trinity in Unity,  
The Father in his majesty,  
The Son in his humanity,  
The Holy Ghost's benignity,  
Three persons, one in Deity.
  4. To serve him always, holily,
  5. To ask him all thing, needfully,
  6. To praise him in all company,
  7. To love him alway, heartily (*a*),
  8. To dread him alway, christianly (*a*),
  9. To ask him mercy, penitently (*a*),
  10. To trust him alway, faithfully,
  11. To obey him alway, willingly,
  12. To abide him alway, patiently,
  13. To thank him alway, thankfully,
  14. To live here alway, virtuously,
  15. To use thy neighbour, honestly,
  16. To look for death still, presently,
  17. To help the poor, in misery,
  18. To hope for Heav'ns felicity,
  19. To have faith, hope, and charity,
  20. To count this life but vanity.
- Be points of christianity.

—◆—

VARIATIONS.

(*a*) stedfastly.(*a*) fearfully.(*a*) heartily.

## ¶ THE AUTHOR'S BELIEF.

---

1. THIS is my stedfast creed, my faith, and all my trust, God the Fa-  
ther.  
That in the heavens there is a God, most mighty,  
mild, and just :  
A God above all Gods, a King above all Kings,  
The Lord of Lords, chief Governor, of heaven and  
earthly things.
  
2. That power hath of life and death, of heaven and Maker of hea-  
ven.  
hell,  
That all things (*a b*) made, as pleaseth him, so won-  
derfull to tell ;  
That made the hanging skies, so deckt with divers  
lights,  
Of darkness made the cheerfull days, and all our rest-  
full nights.
  
3. That clad this earth with herb, with trees, and (*a*) The earth.  
sundry fruits,  
With beast, with bird, with wild and tame, of strange  
and sundry suits ;  
That intermixt the same with mines, like veins of ore,  
Of silver, gold, of precious stones, and treasures many  
more.

---

### VARIATIONS.

(*a b*) thing.

(*a*) of.

## The Author's Belief.

- The waters. 4. That joined brooks to dales, to hills fresh water  
springs,  
With rivers sweet, along the meads, to profit many  
things :
- Frost and  
snow. That made the hoary frosts, the flaky snows so trim,  
The honey dews, the blustering winds, to serve as  
pleaseth him.
- The seas. 5. That made the surging seas, in course to ebb and flow,  
That skilfull man, with sailing ship, might travel to  
and fro ;  
And stored so the same, for man's unthankfull sake,  
That every nation under heaven, might thereby profit  
take.
- The soul of  
man. 6. That gave to man a soul, with reason how to live,  
That both to him and all things else, his blessings daily  
give :  
That is not seen, yet seeth, how man doth run his race,  
Whose daily works, both good and bad, stand known  
before his face.
- Thunder and  
plagues. 7. That sendeth thund'ring claps, like terrors out of hell,  
That man may know a God there is, and in the hea-  
vens doth (c) dwell.  
That sendeth threatening plagues, to keep our lives in  
awe,  
His benefits, if we forget, or do condemn his law.

---

VARIATION.

(c) do.

8. That daily hateth sin, that loveth virtue well, Full of mercy.  
 And (a) is the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel ?  
 That doth displeasure take, when we his laws offend,  
 And yet amidst his heavy wrath, his mercy doth  
 extend.
  
9. This is the Lord of Hosts, the Father of us all, Christ the Son.  
 The maker of whate'er was made, the God on whom I  
 call;  
 Which for the love of man, sent down his only son,  
 Begot of him, before the worlds were any whit begun.
  
10. This entered Mary's womb, as faith affirmeth sure, Christ's birth.  
 Conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of that Virgin Christ God  
 pure : and Man.  
 This was both God and man, of Jews the hoped king,  
 And lived here, save only sin, like man in every thing.
  
11. This is that Virgin's child, that same most holy priest, Christ our  
 The Lamb of God, the Prophet great, whom Scrip- Messias.  
 ture calleth Christ :  
 This, that Messias was, of whom the prophet spake,  
 That should tread down the serpent's head, and our  
 atonement make.
  
12. This, Judas did betray, to false dissembling Jews, Christ's pas-  
 Which unto Pilate, being Judge, did falsely him sion.  
 accuse ;

VARIATION.

(a) as.

## The Author's Belief.

Who (through that wicked judge) and of those Jews'  
despight,  
Condemned and tormented was, with all the force they  
might.

13. To living wight more evil, what could such wretches  
do?  
More piercing wounds, more bitter pains, than they  
did put him to?  
They crowned him with thorn, that was the King of  
Kings,  
That sought to save the soul of man, above all worldly  
things.

Christ's death. 14. This was that (a) Pascal Lamb, whose love for us so  
stood,  
That on the Mount of Calvary, for us did shed his  
blood;  
Where hanging on the cross, no shame he did forsake,  
Till death given him, by piercing spear, an end of life  
did make.

Christ's burial. 15. This, Joseph seeing dead, the body thence did crave,  
And took it forthwith from the cross, and laid it in his  
grave:  
Down thence, he went to hell, in using there his will,  
His power I mean, his slained corpse in tomb remain-  
ing still.

—

VARIATION.

(a) the.



16. From death to life again, the third day he did rise, Christ's resur-  
And seen on earth to his elect, times oft in sundry rection.  
wise ;  
And after into heaven, ascend he did in sight, Christ's ascen-  
And sitteth on the right hand there, of God the father sion.  
of might.
17. Where for us wretches all, his Father he doth pray, Christ shall be  
To have respect unto his death, and put our sins away ; our judge.  
From thence with sounded trump, which noise all  
flesh shall dread,  
He shall return with glory again, to judge the quick  
and dead.
18. Then shall that voice be heard, Come, come, ye good The Judge's  
to me, sentence.  
Hence, hence to hell, you workers evil, where pain  
shall ever be !  
This is that loving Christ, whom I my Saviour call,  
And only put my trust in him, and in none else at all.
19. In God the Holy Ghost, I firmly do believe, God the Holy  
Which from the Father and the Son, a blessed life Ghost.  
doth give ;  
Which by the prophets spake, which doth all comfort  
send,  
Which I do trust shall be my guide, when this my  
life shall end.
20. A Holy Catholic Church, on earth, I grant there is, The Catholic  
And those who frame their lives by that, shall never Church.  
speed amiss :

## The Author's Belief.

The head thereof is Christ, his word the chiefest post,  
Preserver of this temple great, is God, the Holy  
Ghost.

The commu- 21. I do not doubt, there is a multitude of Saints,  
nion of saints.  
More good is done resembling them, than shewing  
them our plaints :  
Their faith and works in Christ, that glory them did  
give,  
Which glory we shall likewise have, if likewise we  
do live.

Forgiveness of 22. At God of heaven there is, forgiveness of our sins,  
sins.  
Through Christes death, through faith in it, and  
through no other gins :  
If we repentant here, his mercy daily crave,  
Through stedfast hope and faith in Christ, forgiveness  
we shall have.

Man's resur- 23. I hope and trust upon the rising of the flesh,  
rection.  
This corpse of mine that first must die, shall rise again  
afresh :  
The soul and body even then, in one shall joined be,  
As Christ did rise from death to life, even so through  
Christ shall we.

Life everlast- 24. As Christ is glorified, and never more shall die,  
ing.  
As Christ ascended is to heaven, through Christ even  
so shall I.  
As Christ I count my head, and I a member of his,  
So God I trust for Christes sake, shall settle me in bliss.

Thus here we learn of God, that there be persons three,  
The Father, Son, the Holy Ghost, one God in Trinity.  
In substance all like one—one God, one Lord, one might,  
Whose persons yet we do divide, and so we may by right.

As God the Father is, the Maker of us all,  
So God the Son, Redeemer is, to whom for help we call :  
And God the Holy Ghost, the soul of man doth win,  
By moving her to wail for grace, ashamed of her sin.

This is that God of Gods, whom every soul should love,  
Whom all men's hearts should quake with fear, his wrath  
on them to move.

That this same mighty God, above all other chief,  
Shall save my soul from dolefull hell, is all my whole  
belief.

---

# ¶ OF THE OMNIPOTENCE OF GOD, AND DEBILITY OF MAN<sup>1</sup>.

1. O God! thou glorious God, what God is like to thee?  
What life, what strength, is like to thine, as all the  
world may see?  
The heaven, the earth, the seas, and all thy works  
therein,  
Do shew (to whom thou wouldst to know) what thou  
hast ever been.
2. But all the thoughts of man, are bent to wretched evil,  
Man doth commit idolatry, bewitched of the devil.  
What evil is left undone, where man may have his  
will;  
Man ever was a hypocrite, and ever will be still.
3. What daily watch is made, the soul of man to flea,  
By Lucifer, by Belzebub, Mammon, and Asmode (b)?  
In devilish pride, in wrath, in coveting too much,  
In fleshly lust, the time is spent—the life of man is  
such.

What these  
four principal  
devils do sig-  
nify.

## VARIATIONS.

(b) Asmodea.

---

<sup>1</sup> In this sacred effusion, the only passage which claims particular remark, is the *third* stanza, where the four principal devils, and their characteristic attributes, are specified.

4. The joy that man hath here (*a*), is as a spark of fire,  
His acts be like the smouldering smoke, himself like  
    (*a*) dirt and mire :  
His strength even as a reed, his age much like the  
    flower,  
His breath or life is but a puff, uncertain every hōur.
5. But for the Holy Ghost, and for his gifts of grace,  
The death of Christ, thy mercy great, man were in  
    wofull case.  
O grant us, therefore, Lord, t'amend what is amiss,  
And when from hence we do depart, to rest with thee  
    in bliss !

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) here he hath,

(*a*) but.

---

**Eleemosyna prodest homini in vita,  
in morte, et post mortem.**

OUT OF ST. AUGUSTINE<sup>1</sup>.

Of alms deeds. For only love of God, more Christian-like to live,  
And for a zeal to help the poor, thine almes daily give.  
Let gift no glory look, nor evil possess thy mind,  
And for a truth, these profits three, through almes shalt  
thou find.

1. First, here the Holy Ghost shall daily through his  
grace,  
Provoke thee to repentant life, God's mercy to embrace.
2. Of goods and friends (by death) when thou thy leave  
must take,  
Thine almes deeds shall clasp thy soul, and never it  
forsake.
3. When God shall after death, call soon for thine account,  
Thine almes then through faith in Christ, shall all  
things else surmount.

---

<sup>1</sup> The translations from St. Augustine are neatly executed, if we consider the age. The Fathers were once read, and commented on: they

are now little more than known by name; yet an appeal to their authority is often necessary, and their evidence will seldom be disputed.

But yet for any deed, put thou no trust therein,  
But put thy trust in God (through Christ) to pardon  
thee thy sin.

For else, as cackling hen with noise bewrays her nest,  
Even so go thou, and blaze thy deeds, and lose thou  
all the rest.

---

---

MALUS HOMO.

OUT OF ST. AUGUSTINE (a).

---

OF naughty man I read, two sundry things are meant,  
Th'one is man, th'other naught, which ought him to repent.  
The man we ought to love, because of much therein,  
The evil in him, we ought to hate, because it is a sin.  
So doth thy daily sins the heavenly Lord offend,  
But when thou dost repent the same, his wrath is at an end.

---

VARIATION.

(a) "Malus homo," not quoted as from St. Augustine.

---

---



# **I Of Two Sorts of Men, the one good and the other bad.**

OUT OF ST. AUGUSTINE (a).

---

SINCE first the world began, there was and shall be still,  
Of human kind, two sundry sorts, th'one good, and th'other  
ill ;  
Which till the judgment day, shall here together dwell,  
But then the good shall up to heaven, the bad shall down  
to hell.

---

## **VARIATION.**

(a) " Of two Sorts of Men," not quoted as from St. Augustine.

---

## ST. BARNARD'S VERSES.

Diabolo cum resistitur, est ut formica : cùm verò ejus suggestio recipitur,  
fortis est ut leo.

## OUT OF ST. AUGUSTINE.

When Satan we resist, a pismire shall he be,  
But when we seem to give him place, a lion then is he.

## ¶ Eight of St. Barnard's Verses,

BOTH IN LATIN AND ENGLISH,

WITH ONE NOTE TO THEM BOTH (a) <sup>1</sup>.

- 
1. CUR mundus militat, sub vana gloria,  
Cujus prosperitas, est transitoria ?  
Tam citò labitur ejus potentia,  
Quàm vasa figuli, quæ sunt fragilia.
- 

## VARIATION.

(a) The Latin and English on opposite pages.

---

<sup>1</sup> These eight verses of St. Barnard seem to have been extremely popular at one period, on account of their moral tendency. The sentiment was not only transfused into vernacular language, but the words were also set to music. In the "Paradise of Dainty Devices," first printed in 1576, we find translations of the same words, by Barnaby

Rich, as Mr. Haslewood supposes, though he uses the remarkable signature to all his pieces in that curious collection, of "My Luck is Loss." I transcribe the first verse, in order that it may be compared with Tusser's translation. The sentiment is indeed expanded, but the spirit is proportionably weakened.

## St. Barnard's Verses.

1. Why so triumphs the world, in pomp and glory vain,  
Whose state so happy thought, so fickle doth (a)  
    remain?  
Whose bravery (a) slippery stands, and doth so soon  
    decay,  
As doth the potter's pan, compact of brittle clay.
  
2. Plus crede literis, scriptis in glacie,  
    Quàm mundi fragilis vanæ fallaciæ;  
    Fallax in præmiis, virtutis specie,  
    Quæ nunquam habuit tempus fiduciæ.
  
2. More credit see thou give, to letters wrote in ice,  
Than unto vain deceits, of brittle world's device:  
In gifts to virtue due, beguiling many one,  
Yet those same never have, long time to hope upon.
  
3. Majis credendum est viris fallacibus,  
    Quam mundi miseris prosperitatibus,  
    Falsis insaniis et voluptatibus,  
    Falsis quoque studiis et vanitatibus.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) unsteady doth.

(a) power.

---

Why doth each state apply itself to  
worldly praise?
And undertake such toil, to heap up  
honour's gain;Whose seat, though seeming sure, on  
fickle fortune stays,Whose gifts are never prov'd perpe-  
tual to remain?But even as earthen pots, with every  
fillip fails:So fortune's favour flits, and fame  
with honour quails.

3. To false dissembling men, more trust is to be had,  
Than to the prosperous state of wretched world, so bad :  
What with voluptuousness, and other maddish toys.  
False studies won with pain, false vanities and joys.

4. Dic ubi Salamon, olim tam nobilis ?  
Vel ubi Samson est, dux invincibilis ?  
Vel dulcis Jonathas, multum amabilis ?  
Vel pulcher Absolon, vultu mirabilis ?

4. Tell where is Salamon, that once so noble was ?  
Or where now Samson is, in strength whom none could  
pass ?  
Or worthy Jonathas, that prince so lovely bold ?  
Or fair Absolon, so goodly to behold ?

5. Quò Cæsar abiit, celsus imperio ?  
Vel Dives splendidus, totus in prandio ?  
Dic ubi Tullius, clarus eloquio ?  
Vel Aristoteles, summus ingenio ?

5. Shew whither is Cæsar gone, that conquer'd far and  
near ?  
Or that rich famous carl, so given to belly cheer ?  
Shew where is Tully now, for eloquence so fit ?  
Or Aristoteles, of such a pregnant wit ?

6. O esca vermium ! O massa pulveris !  
O ros ! O vanitas ! cur sic extolleris ?  
Ignoras penitùs, utrùm cras vixeris,  
Fac bonum omnibus, quàm diu poteris.

6. O thou fit bait for worms ! O thou great heap of dust !  
O dew ! O vanity ! why so extoll'st thy lust ?

## St. Barnard's Verses.

Thou therefore ignorant, what time thou hast to live,  
Do good to every man, while here thou hast to give.

7. Quàm breve festum est, hæc mundi gloria ?  
Ut umbra hominis, sic ejus gaudia ;  
Quæ semper subtrahit æterna præmia,  
Et ducunt hominem ad dura devia.

7. How short a feast (to count) is this same world's renown ?  
Such as men's shadows be, such joys it brings to town ;  
Which always plucketh us, from God's eternal bliss,  
And leadeth man to hell, a just reward of (a) his.

8. Hæc mundi gloria, quæ magni penditur,  
Sacris in literis, flos fœni dicitur ;  
Vel leve folium, quod vento rapitur,  
Sic vita hominum, hâc vitâ tollitur.

8. The bravery of this world, esteemed here so much,  
In Scripture likened is, to flower of grass and such.  
Like as the leaf so light, which wind abroad doth blow,  
(c) So doth this worldly life, the life of man bestow (a).

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) for.      (c) So life in this our life, full soon is overthrow.  
(a) Here follows FINIS.

---

## OF THE AUTHOR'S LINKED VERSES,

DEPARTING FROM THE COURT TO THE COUNTRY (a) <sup>1</sup>.

MUSE not, my friend, to find me here,  
Contented with this mean estate ;  
And seem to do with willing cheer,  
That courtier doth so deadly hate.



For Fortune, look,  
Hath changed hue  
And I my book,  
Must learn anew (a).

### VARIATIONS.

(a) In this edition, "The Description of an envious and naughty Neighbour," follows the Verses of St. Barnard, being in the subsequent impressions transferred to *Husbandry*, where it now stands, p. 212 ; but the following poem, which certainly

(a) In this edition the title of the piece is, "Of the Author's departing from Court to the Country," and the verses are not linked, but the four short lines follow the four long.

<sup>1</sup> It is said to be usual for disappointed courtiers to conceal their chagrin, under the mask of relaxation from business, and the enjoyment of rural amusements. Whether the philosophic spirit which breathes in these *linked verses*, as they are absurdly called, was the emanation of the heart, or the dictate of wounded pride, it is now too late to inquire ; but it is evident, from some

portion of regret mixed with resignation, that they were written at the time when our author first retired from court, and that they were appended to this work long after. They allude to recent events, to "fatal chance," and to other circumstances, which would have been obliterated from the mind, after the lapse of so many years.

## The Author's Linked Verses.

2. And yet of force to learn anew,  
 Would much abash the dulled brain ;  
 I crave to judge, if this be true,  
 The truant child, that know'th the pain.
- But where a spight,  
 Of force must be ;  
 What is that wight,  
 May disagree ?

## VARIATION.

deserves to be preserved, is not to be found after the edition of 1573, and its reprint, 1577.

*Fortuna non est semper amica,  
 Superbiam igitur semper devita.*

Though Fortune smiles, and fawns upon thy side,  
 Thyself extol for that no whit the more ;  
 Though Fortune frowns, and wresteth all things wide,  
 Let fancy stay—keep courage still in store :  
 For chance may change, as chance hath done before,  
 Thus shalt thou hold more safe thine honour got,  
 Or lose the less, though Fortune will or not.

Thy friend at this, shall daily pleasure have,  
 When war'ly thus, thou bear'st thyself upright ;  
 Thy foes at this, shall gladly friendship crave,  
 When hope so small is left, to wreck their spite.  
 For lowly life withstandeth envy quite,  
 As floating ship, by bearing sail a-low,  
 Withstandeth storms, when boisterous winds do blow.

Thy usage thus, in time shall win the goal.  
 Though doubtful haps, dame Fortune sends between ;  
 And thou shalt see thine enemies blow the coal :  
 To ease thine heart, much more then thou dost ween ;  
 Yea, though a change most strangely should be seen.  
 Yet friend at need shall secret friendship make,  
 When foe, indeed, shall want his part to take.



- |                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                        |                                                                                                                                       |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>3. No, no, God wot ! to disagree,<br/>             Is vent'ring all, to make or mar :<br/>         If fortune frown, we daily see,<br/>             It is not best to strive too far.</p>                  | <br> | <p>For lordly bent,<br/>             Must learn to spare,<br/>         And be content,<br/>             With country fare.</p>        |
| <p>4. From dainty court to country fare,<br/>             Too dainty fed, is diet strange ;<br/>         From city joy to country care,<br/>             To skillless folk, is homely change.</p>             | <br> | <p>Where need yet cau,<br/>             None other skill ;<br/>         Sometime, poor man,<br/>             Must break his will.</p> |
| <p>5. If courtly change, so breaketh will,<br/>             That country life may serve the turn ;<br/>         What profit then, in striving still,<br/>             Against the prick to seem to spurn.</p> | <br> | <p>If court with cart,<br/>             Must be content :<br/>         What ease 'to heart,<br/>             Though mind repent ?</p> |
| <p>6. What gain I, though I do repent ?<br/>             My crotches all, are broke and gone ;<br/>         My wonted friends are careless bent,<br/>             They fear no chance I chance upon.</p>      | <br> | <p>As need doth make<br/>             Old age to trot ;<br/>         So must I take,<br/>             In worth my lot.</p>            |
| <p>7. Now, if I take in worth my lot,<br/>             That fatal chance doth force me to,<br/>         If ye be friends, upraid (a) me not ;<br/>             But use a friend, as friends should do.</p>    | <br> | <p>Behold the horse,<br/>             Must trudge for pelf ;<br/>         And yet of force,<br/>             Content itself.</p>      |

---

(a) embraid.

## ¶ THE AUTHOR'S LIFE<sup>1</sup>.

Epodium.

Now, gentle friend, if thou be kind,  
 Disdain thou not, although the lot,  
 Will now with me no better be,  
     Than doth appear :  
 Nor let it grieve, that thus I live,  
 But rather guess, for quietness,  
 As others do, so do I too,  
     Content me here.

2. By leave and love of God above,  
 I mind to shew, in verses few,  
 How through the briers, my youthful years,  
     Have run their race ;  
 And further say, why thus I stay  
 And mind to live, as bee in hive,  
 Full bent to spend my life t'an end,  
     In this same place<sup>2</sup>.

---

<sup>1</sup> This poetical life appears to have been first added to the edition of 1573, and is the chief source from whence biographers have drawn their supplies; though the want of chronological data, as has been observed in the biographical sketch

prefixed to this work, is severely felt.

<sup>2</sup> The author means London; but though it is believed he died there, it is evident from the sequel, that he left it on account of the plague.

3. It came to pass, that born I was,  
Of lineage good, of (a) gentle blood,  
In Essex layer, in village fair,  
That Rivenhall hight<sup>1</sup> :  
Which village ly'd, by Banktree side ;  
There spend did I mine infancy,  
There then my name, in honest fame,  
Remain'd in sight.
  
4. I yet but young, no speech of tongue,  
Nor tears withall, that often fall,  
From mother's eyes, when child outcries,  
To part her fro,  
Could pity make, good father take,  
But out I must, to song be thrust,  
Say what I would, do what I could,  
His mind was so.
  
5. O painfull time, for every crime !  
What touzed ears, like baited bears !  
What bobbed lips, what jerks, what nips !  
What hellish toys !  
What robes how bare, what college fare<sup>2</sup> !  
What bread how stale, what penny ale !  
Then Wallingford, how wert thou abhor'd,  
Of seely boys !

Born at Rivenhall in Essex.

Set to song school.

Chorister's misery.

Wallingford college.

VARIATION.

(a) and.

---

<sup>1</sup> Rivenhall, now Ravenhall, near Kelvedon and Witham, in Essex, about forty miles from London. *vestis liberata*, often called robe, allowed annually by the college.—*Warton*.

<sup>2</sup> "What robes." The livery or

Singing men's  
commissions.

6. Then for my voice, I must (no choice)  
Away of force, like posting horse,  
For sundry men had placards then <sup>1</sup>,  
Such child to take :  
The better breast, the lesser rest <sup>2</sup>,  
To serve the choir, now there, now here ;  
For time so spent, I may repent,  
And sorrow make.

John Redford,  
an excellent  
musician.

7. But mark the chance, myself to 'vance,  
By friendship's lot to Paul's I got ;  
So found I grace, a certain space  
Still to remain :  
With Redford there, the like no where <sup>3</sup>,  
For cunning such, and virtue much,  
By whom some part, of musick art,  
So did I gain.

<sup>1</sup> In *Strye* is preserved the abstract of an instrument, from which it appears that commissioners were dispatched into various parts of England, to impress boys from any choir for the royal chapel, in the time of Edward VI. ; but the same practice must have existed in the reign of Henry VIII. to which period Tusser refers in this passage.

<sup>2</sup> "The better breast," &c. On these words, Hawkins, in his *History of Music*, gives the following comment. "In singing, the sound

is originally produced by the action of the lungs, which are so essential an organ in this respect, that to have a good breast was formerly a common periphrasis, to denote a good singer. In Shakspeare's *Comedy of Twelfth Night*, after the clown is asked to sing, Sir Andrew Aguecheek says,

"By my troth, the fool hath an excellent breast."

<sup>3</sup> John Redford, organist and almoner of St. Paul's.

8. From Paul's I went, to Eton sent,  
To learn straightways, the Latin phrase,  
Where fifty-three stripes, given to me,  
At once I had,  
For fault but small, or none at all,  
It came to pass, thus beat I was :  
See UDALL, see, the mercy of thee<sup>1</sup>,  
To me, poor lad.

Nicholas  
Udall, school-  
master of  
Eton.

9. To London hence, to Cambridge thence.  
With thanks to thee, O Trinity,  
That to thy Hall, so passing all<sup>2</sup>,  
I got at last.  
There joy I felt, there trim I dwelt,  
There heaven from hell, I shifted well,  
With learned men, a number then,  
The time I past.

Trinity Hall, in  
Cambridge.

10. Long sickness had, then was I glad,  
To leave my book, to prove and look,  
In court what gain, by taking pain,  
Might well be found :

<sup>1</sup> As Nicholas Udall did not take his degree of M. A., according to the Oxford antiquary, till 1534; if this is correct, it is not probable that he was appointed more early to the mastership of Eton school, and consequently Tusser could not have exceeded the age of eighteen or nineteen at this time; though he might possibly have received part of his education under another master.— See *Biographical Sketch*.

<sup>2</sup> "So passing all." From these words, it might be imagined that Trinity Hall was a superb edifice: (Trinity College was not then built) but till it was repaired, between 1740 and 1750, it is said to have been but a poor looking place; and which is reported to have been characterized by Dr. Mar, the Vice-chancellor, when speaking of it to the King of Denmark, as *le petit coigne*.

Lord Paget  
good to his  
servants.

Lord Paget than, that nobleman <sup>1</sup>,  
Whose soul, I trust, is with the just,  
That same was he, enriched me,  
With many a pound.

11. While this betide, good parents dy'd,  
One after one, till both were gone,  
Whose pedigree, who list may see,  
In herald's book <sup>2</sup>:  
Whose souls in bliss, be long ere this;  
For hope we must, as God is just,  
So here that crave, shall mercy have,  
That mercy look.

The hope we  
have of the  
dead.

The vices of  
the court.

12. By court I spy'd, and ten years try'd,  
That cards and dice, with Venus vice,  
And peevish pride, from virtue wide,  
With some so wraught,  
That Tyburn play, made them away <sup>3</sup>,  
Or beggar's state, as ill (*a*) to hate,  
By such like evils, I saw such drivels,  
To come to naught.

—  
VARIATION.

(*a*) evil.

---

<sup>1</sup> Of Lord Paget, the ancestor of the Uxbridge family, see an historical note in the *Biographical Sketch*.

<sup>2</sup> See letter from the Windsor Herald, in the prefixed Life.

<sup>3</sup> Tyburn appears, from authentic

records, to have been used as a place of execution in the time of Edward III. and probably before. Its original stigma will not soon be obliterated, though it has ceased to be the scene of capital punishments.

13. Yet it is not, to be forgot,  
 In court that some, to worship come,  
 And some in time, to honour climb,  
 And speed full well :  
 Some have such gift, that trim they shift,  
 Some profit make, by pains they take,  
 In perill much, though oft are such,  
 In court that dwell.

The court  
 commended.

- 14 When court 'gan frown, and strife in town,  
 And lords and knights saw heavy sights,  
 Then took I wife, and led my life,  
 In Suffolk soil <sup>1</sup> :  
 There was I fain, myself to train,  
 To learn too long, the farmer's song,  
 For hope of pelf, like worldly elf,  
 To moil and toil.

The nobility at  
 variance in  
 Edward the  
 VI.'s days.

15. As in this book, who list to look,  
 Of husbandry and huswifery,  
 There may he find, more of my mind,  
 Concerning this :  
 To cark (*a*) and care, and ever bare,  
 With loss and pain, to little gain,  
 With shifts to save, to cram Sir Knave,  
 What life it is.

At Katwade in  
 Suffolk, this  
 book first de-  
 vised.

---

VARIATION.

(*a*) carp.

---

<sup>1</sup> We have no information respecting the name, age, or family of Tussler's first wife. On his marriage he settled, as we learn from a marginal

note, first added to the edition of 1580, at Katwade in Suffolk, where he devised his book of husbandry.



Ipswich com-  
mended.

16. When wife could not, through sickness got,  
More toil abide, so nigh sea-side,  
Then thought I best, from toil to rest,  
And Ipswich try ;  
A town of price, like Paradise,  
For quiet then, and honest men,  
There was I glad, much friendship had,  
A time to lie.

The death of  
his first wife.

17. There left good wife, this present life,  
And there left I, house charges lie,  
For glad was he, might send for me,  
Good luck so stood :  
In Suffolk there, where everywhere,  
Even of the best, besides the rest,  
That never did their friendship hide,  
To do me good.

New married  
in Norfolk.

18. O Suffolk, thou, content thee now,  
Thou hadst the praise, in those same days,  
For squires and knights, that well delights,  
Good house to keep :  
For Norfolk wiles, so full of guiles,  
Have caught my toe, by wiving so,  
That out to thee, I see for me,  
No way to creep.

Mistress Amy  
Moon.

19. For lo! for guile, what haps the while,  
Through Venus toys, in hope of joys,  
I chanced soon to find a Moon<sup>1</sup>,  
Of cheerful hue ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Of Mrs. Amy Moon, his second wife, Tusser seems to write with no partial praise. There is an oblique insinuation, at least, against her temper or conduct. She was probably much younger.

Which well and fine, me thought did shine,  
And never change—(a thing most strange)  
Yet kept in sight, her course aright,  
And compass true.

20. Behold of truth, with wife in youth,  
For joy at large, what daily charge,  
Through children's hap, what opened gap,  
To more begun :  
The child at nurse, to rob the purse,  
The same to wed, to trouble head ;  
For pleasure rare, such endless care,  
Hath husband won.

The charges  
following a  
young wife.

21. Then did I dwell, in Diram cell<sup>1</sup>,  
A place for wood, that trimly stood,  
With flesh and fish as heart could wish ;  
But when I spy'd,  
That lord with lord, could not accord,  
But now pound he, and now pound we ;  
Then left I all, because such brawl,  
I list not bide.

West Diram  
Abbey.

22. O Southwell ! what, meanst thou by that<sup>2</sup>,  
Thou worthy wight, thou famous knight,  
So me to crave, and to thy grave,  
Go, by and by.

Sir Richard  
Southwell.

---

<sup>1</sup> West Dereham Abbey, near Downham, Norfolk, founded by Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, for Præmonstratensian canons.

<sup>2</sup> I regret that I am unable to give any further account of this patron of Tusser, whose memory he has embalmed in this passage.

## The Author's Life.

O Death ! thou foe, why didst thou so,  
 Ungently treat that jewel great,  
 Which op'd his door, to rich and poor,  
 So bounteously.

His seven exe-  
 cutors.

23. There thus bestad, when leave I had,  
 By death of him, to sink or swim,  
 And ravens I saw, together draw,  
     In such a sort ;  
 Then ways I sought, by wisdom taught,  
 To bear low sail, lest stock should quail,  
 Till ship might find, with prosperous wind,  
     Some safer port.

Norwich city.

24. At length by view, to shore I drew,  
 Discharging straight, both ship and freight,  
 At Norwich fine, for me and mine,  
     A city trim ;  
 Where strangers well may seem to dwell,  
 That pitch and pay, or keep their day ;  
 But who that want, shall find it scant,  
     So good for him.

Norwich qua-  
 lities.

Master Salis-  
 bury, Dean of  
 Norwich.

25. But Salisbury, how were kept my vow<sup>1</sup>,  
 If praise from thee were kept by me ?  
 Thou gentle dean, my only mean,  
     There then to live :  
 Though churls such some, to crave can come,  
 And pray once got, regard thee not,  
 Yet, live or die, so will not I,  
     Example give.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is probable that he was employed as a singing man in the Cathedral, by the influence of Dean Salisbury.

26. When learned men could there nor then,  
Devise to 'swage, the stormy rage,  
Nor yet the fury of my dissury<sup>1</sup>,  
That long I had ;  
From Norwich air, in great despair  
Away to fly, or else to die,  
To seek more health, to seek more wealth,  
Then was I glad.

In 138 hours I  
never made a  
drop of water.

27. From thence so sent, away I went,  
With sickness worn, as one forlorn,  
To house my head at Fairsted<sup>2</sup>,  
Where whiles I dwelt  
The tithing life, the tithing strife,  
Through tithing ill of Jack and Gill,  
The daily pays, the miry ways,  
Too long I felt.

Fairsted  
parsonage in  
Essex.

28. When charges grew, still new and new,  
And that I spy'd, if parson dy'd,  
(All hope in vain) to hope for gain,  
I might go dance ;  
Once rid my hand, of parsonage land,  
Thence, by and by, away went I,  
To London straight, to hope and wait,  
For better chance.

---

<sup>1</sup> From the marginal note we learn that this dreadful strangury, or suppression of urine, continued nearly four days.

<sup>2</sup> Fairsted, a parish about four miles from Witham, and near the natal place of our author.

London com-  
mended.

29. Well, London ! well, thou bear'st the bell,  
Of praise about, England throughout,  
And dost indeed, to such as need,  
Much kindness shew.  
Who that with thee, can hardly agree,  
Nor can well praise, thy friendly ways,  
Shall friendship find, to please his mind,  
In places few.

Unthrift's or-  
der.

30. As for such mates as virtue hates,  
Or he or they, that (a) go so gay,  
That needs he must, take all of trust,  
For him and his :  
Though such by wo, through Lothbury go,  
For being spy'd about Cheapside,  
Lest mercers' books, for money looks,  
Small matter it is.

The plague at  
London.

31. (a) When gains were gone, and years grew on ;  
And death did cry, from London fly,  
In Cambridge then, I found again,  
A resting plot ;

—◆—  
VARIATIONS.

(a) as.

(a) Stanza 31. first introduced in the edition of 1580.

---

<sup>1</sup> The plague, to which Tusser evidently alludes, according to Maitland, raged in London in 1574 and 75.

It must have been subsequent to 1573, as the edition of that date does not contain this or the following stanza.

In college best, of all the rest,  
With thanks to thee, O Trinity<sup>1</sup> !  
Through thee and thine, for me and mine,  
Some stay I got.

Trinity Col-  
lege in Cam-  
bridge.

32. (a) Since hap haps so, let toiling go,  
Let serving pains, yield forth her gains,  
Let courtly gifts, with wedding shifts,  
Help now to live :  
Let music win, let stock come in ;  
Let wisdom carve, let reason serve,  
For here I crave, such end to have,  
As God shall give,

Youth ill  
spent, makes  
age repent.

33. Thus friends by me, perceive may ye,  
That gentry stands, not all by lands,  
Nor all so feft, or plenty left,  
By parent's gift ;  
But now and then of gentlemen,  
The younger son is driven to run,  
And glad to seek, from creek to creek,  
To come by thrift.

A lesson for  
younger bro-  
thers.

VARIATION.

(a) Stanza 32. first introduced in the edition of 1580.

---

<sup>1</sup> Trinity College, founded in 1546, which may be well called "The college best of all the rest." It ap-  
pears, however, that Tusser again returned to London, where he died.

A true lesson.

34. And more by this, to conster is  
In world is set, enough to get ;  
But where and when, that scarcely can  
The wisest tell.  
By learning, some to riches come ;  
By ship and plough, some get enough ;  
And some so wive, that trim they thrive,  
And speed full well.

Hardness in  
youth not the  
worst.

35. To this before, add one thing more,  
Youth hardness taught, with knowledge wrought,  
Most apt do prove, to (a) shift and shove,  
Among the best.

Cocking of  
youth not the  
best.

Where cocking dads, make saucy lads,  
In youth so rage, to beg in age,  
Or else to fetch, a Tyburn stretch,  
Among the rest.

Not pride, but  
wealth in age  
needful.

36. Not rampish toy of girl and boy,  
Nor garment trim of her or him,  
In childhood spent, to fond intent,  
Good end doth frame.  
If mark we shall, the sum of all,  
The end it is that noted is,  
Which, if it bide, with virtue try'd,  
Deserveth fame.

38

---

VARIATION.

(a) so ; *probably a misprint.*



37. When all is done, learn this my son,  
Not friend nor skill, nor wit at will,  
Nor ship nor clod, but only God,

Doth all in all :

Man taketh pain, God giveth gain,  
Man doth his best, God doth the rest,  
Man well intends, God foizon sends,

Else want he shall.

Man doth labour, God  
doth bless.

38. Some seek for wealth, I seek my health,  
Some seek to please, I seek mine ease,  
Some seek to save, I seek to have,

To live upright,

More than to ride with pomp and pride,

Or for to jet (a), in others debt :

Such is my skill, and shall be still,

For any wight.

A contented  
mind is worth  
all.

39. Too fond were I, here thus to lie,  
Unless that wealth might further health,  
And profit some should thereby come,

To help withall ;

This causeth me, well pleas'd to be (a),

Such drift to make, such life to take,

Enforcing mind, remorse to find,

As need, need shall.

---

VARIATIONS.

(a) set.

(a) pleased be.

Happy that  
lives well: un-  
happy that  
dies evil.

40. Friend, all things weigh'd, that here is said,  
And being got, that pays the shot,  
Methinks of right, have leave I might,  
(Death drawing near)  
To seek some ways, my God to praise,  
And mercy crave, in time to have,  
And for the rest, what he thinks best,  
To suffer here<sup>1</sup>.

---

<sup>1</sup> The moral feeling and the pious  
resignation which breathe in the  
concluding stanzas of this poem, leave  
a powerful impression on the mind;  
and whatever vicissitudes in life the  
EDITOR or his READERS may expe-

rience, he wishes for HIMSELF and  
for THEM the same philosophic and  
christian composure, on a retrospect  
of the past, and the anticipated view  
of futurity.

Finis.

---

# A TABLE

## OF THE

### Points of Huswifery

MENTIONED

IN THIS BOOK.

| <i>Page.</i>                       | <i>Page.</i>                       |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| The Author's Epistle to the        | Dinner Matters ..... 259           |
| Lady Paget ..... 235               | Afternoon Works ..... 262          |
| The Author's Epistle to the        | Evening Works ..... 264            |
| Reader ..... 238                   | Supper Matters ..... 266           |
| The Author's Preface to his        | After Supper Matters, &c. .... 267 |
| Book of Huswifery ..... 240        | The Ploughman's Feasting Days 270  |
| The Praise of Huswifery ..... ib.  | Good Huswifely Physic ..... 274    |
| A Description of Huswife and       | The good Motherly Nursery .. 275   |
| Huswifery ..... 241                | A Precept of Thinking on the       |
| Instructions to Huswifery .... 242 | Poor ..... 276                     |
| A Note of Cock-crowing ..... 245   | A Comparison between good          |
| Huswifery — Morning Works,         | Huswifery and evil ..... 277       |
| &c. .... 247                       | The Means for Children to at-      |
| Breakfast Doings ..... 249         | tain Learning ..... 280            |
| Huswifely Admonitions or Les-      | A Description of Woman's Age,      |
| sons ..... 250                     | from fourteen to fourscore         |
| Brewing ..... 253                  | and four ..... 282                 |
| Baking ..... 254                   | The Innholder's Posy ..... 283     |
| Cookery ..... 255                  | Certain Table Lessons ..... 284    |
| Dairy ..... ib.                    | Lessons for Waiting Servants . 286 |
| Scouring ..... 256                 | Husbandly Posies for the Hall 287  |
| Washing ..... 257                  | Posies for the Parlour ..... 288   |
| Malting ..... 258                  | Posies for the Guest's Chamber 289 |

# A Table of the Points of Huswifery.

|                                        | <i>Page.</i> |                                | <i>Page.</i> |
|----------------------------------------|--------------|--------------------------------|--------------|
| Posies for thine own Bed-chamber ..... | 291          | Of Alms Deeds .....            | 304          |
| Sonnet to the Lady Paget ....          | 292          | Malus Homo .....               | 305          |
| Principal Points of Religion ..        | 293          | Of two Sorts of People, &c. .. | 306          |
| The Author's Belief .....              | 295          | St. Barnard's Verses .....     | 307          |
| Of the Omnipotence of God, &c.         | 302          | On departing from the Court *  | 311          |
|                                        |              | The Author's Life .....        | 314          |

Finis.

---

\* Under VARIATIONS at this page, will be found what the Author calls "A Sonnet on the Inconstancy of Fortune," restored from the edition of 1573.

---

## GLOSSARY

OF

LOCAL, DOMESTIC, AND OBSOLETE WORDS,  
AND MODES OF SPELLING,

FOUND IN

## Tusser.

## A.

*TO addle.* To increase in bulk, to grow as a tree.

*Along.* At a distance, or a long way off; also progressive motion.

*Alow.* Below, deep.

*Armer.* Armour.

*Arraid.* Managed, ordered, disposed.

*Avens.* The herb bennet.

*To avouch.* To warrant.

*Aumbry, or Ambry.* A bread and cheese cup-board, a press to hold victuals. *North.*

*Awk, or Auk.* Awkward.

## B.

*Baggagely.* Worthless.

*Bayes, or Baies.* Chidings, scoldings.

*A Balk.* A narrow slip of land, between ridge and ridge.

*Ball.* A name for a horse.

*To ban.* To curse.

*Bandog.* A mastiff, a house dog.

*A Barth.* A sheltered place, or pasture for cattle and sheep.

*To beath, or bath.* To set green wood by the heat of a fire. *Norf. and Suff.*

*Beck, Bex.* Beak, beaks, applied likewise, vulgarly, to human mouths.

*Been.* Property, goods, wealth.

*Belive.* Anon, towards night.

*Bent.* Inclination. Also power stretched to the full, as a bow.

*To beshrew.* To wish ill to, a curse light on.

*Bestad.* Happened, treated in a particular way from events.

*To bide.* To abide.  
*To blenge, or blench.* To evade, hinder, obstruct.  
*A Blouse.* A weather-beaten, masculine-looking woman.  
*A Boll.* A measure, quantity.  
*Boodle, or buddle.* *Norf.* Corn marigold, *chrysanthemum segetum* \*.  
*Bore.* Bore-cole, a kind of cabbage.  
*A Bow.* A bough of a tree, sometimes so spelt.  
*Bowd-eaten.* Eaten with weevils.  
*Norf.*  
*Brakes.* Ferns.  
*Brank.* Buckwheat.  
*Breaching.* Making breaches, quarrelling.  
*A Breck.* A break, breach.  
*Brest.* Breast, voice.  
*To brook.* To conjure up, to collect as the clouds do before rain.  
*A Bulchin.* A bull calf.  
*Bullimong.* A mixture of oats, pease, and vetches.  
*Buskets.* Brakes, small bushes scattered about.  
*To but.* To abut.

## C.

*A Cadaw.* A jackdaw.  
*To camp.* To play at foot-ball.  
*Campers.* Players at foot-ball.  
*Norf.*  
*Canteth.* Dissembles for profit.  
*Carren.* Carrion.  
*To cast.* To design, to contrive.  
*Champion.* Open field. Sometimes used to express the occupiers of such land.  
*Cheerly.* Pleasant, well-looking.  
*Chinks.* Any thing that rattles, applied to money in a purse.  
*Ciss.* A contraction of Cicely, a woman's name; probably common among the lower ranks in former days.  
*Clatter.* Noise.  
*To clicket.* To let one's tongue run incessantly.  
*To climber.* To clamber, to run up.  
*Closier.* Enclosure.  
*Cocking.* Cockering, spoiling by indulgence.  
*Cockney.* A person who is cockered or indulged, an effeminate, whether belonging to town or country.  
*Codware.* Pulse, pease, beans, &c.  
*Coil.* A constant round of duties.  
*Commodities.* Advantages.  
*Compas.* Compost, manure.  
*To compas.* To apply compost, to dung.  
*A Coney.* A small cone, a bee-hive.  
*To conster.* To construe.  
*To contrary.* To contradict.  
*Corsie, or coresie.* A curse, jeer, ridicule.  
*To crake, or crack.* To boast of.  
*Creeks.* A cant term for servants who are drawn into creeks or corners. Also corners themselves.  
*A Crone.* An old ewe.  
*Crotches.* Forked sticks.

---

\* A very troublesome weed, in the Norfolk sandy soils.

*Cumbersome.* Troublesome.

*Cunning.* Skilful.

*Fier.* Fire, pronounced in two syllables.

## D.

*A Dallop.* A patch among corn that has escaped the plough. *Norf.* and *Ess.*

*Dank.* Damp, moist.

*Dayeth.* Fixes a day, procrastinates.

*Deil.* A wench. "Docking the dell," dangling at a wench's tail.

*Denaid.* Denied.

*To depart with.* To part with.

*Dight.* Decked, prepared.

*Dissury.* A strangury, a suppression of urine.

*A Dole.* A charitable gift or donation. Also a small portion of land, in the form of a balk, ridge, or bed.

*A Douse.* A sportive slap in the face.

*A Drivell.* A waster, a waste.

*A Droy.* A scullion, a person of all work?

## E.

*Edaish.* Stubble of a preceding crop, land that has produced corn.

*Etch.* The same, as above.

## F.

*To fare.* To farrow, to bring forth pigs.

*Fay.* Faith.

*Feft.* Enfeoffed, put in possession.

*To fet.* To fetch, to bring.

*To fie, or fye.* To fine, to clean.

*Fieing, or feying.* Cleaning, emptying, applied to ponds, meadows, &c.

## G.

*A Gaff.* An iron hook.

*To gage.* To pawn.

*Galls.* Veins of land through which the water oozes. *Norf. &c.*

*Gan.* Began, a contraction of.

*Garson, or garçon.* A boy, or fellow. *French.*

*Geany.* Gainful.

*Geeses.* Geese.

*Gentils.* Maggots infesting cheese.

*Gently.* Gently.

*Gins.* Means, contrivances, now obsolete in that sense.

*Goeler.* Yellower. *Norfolk* and *Suffolk.*

*To gove.* To make a mow.

*Goving.* Making a mow, from *goff*, a mow.

*Grossum caput.* A blockhead.

*To grutch.* To grudge.

*Guise.* Manner, fashion. Also custom.

## H.

*Haberd.* Dried salt cod-fish.

*Haile.* Hauled, drawn.

*Hallontide.* Hallowmas, All-Saints' day. November 1.

*Hastings.* A variety of pease.

*Haught.* High.

*To haunt, v. n.* To belong to.

*Hight.* Named, called.

*Hilback.* Extravagance in apparel.

*Host, hostis.* An entertainer.

*Hull.* The fruit of thorns, haws, holly?

*Hulver.* Holly. *Norf.*



*Husbands.* Husbandmen.

*A Hutch.* A hoard.

### I. J.

*A Jack.* A drinking vessel, usually containing about half a pint.

*Idely.* Idly.

*A Jet.* A course, a device.

*To jet.* To cast about, to contrive.

*To jetty.* To busy, to employ one's-self with reflection.

### K.

*Karl or Carl hemp.* Male hemp.

*A Kell.* A kiln.

*Kest.* Cast.

*Kiffe.* Friends, acquaintances, as contradistinguished from *kin*.

### L.

*A Lash.* A string or cord in which beasts are held, snare. *Obsolete.*

*To lash.* To launch. Also to lavish.

*Lashingly.* Lavishly.

*Lang de beef.* Ox-tongue. *Picris echinoides.*

*Largess.* Bounty.

*Launders.* Laundresses.

*Laus tibi.* A plant.

*To lay.* To provide, study, contrive.

*Layer.* Soil, *Ess.* Also manure.

*Lease.* Cow pasture.

*To leese.* To lose.

*To lceve.* To live.

*A Let.* A hindrance.

*Lever.* Better. *Essex.*

*Lightly.* Of course, as a matter of course.

*Likely.* Promising.

*Lillium convallium.* Lily of the valley.

*Ling.* Heath.

*Litherly.* Lazy, idle, slothful.

*Lond.* Land.

*Longwort.* Pellitory of Spain, a plant.

*Lossels.* Worthless wretches.

### M.

*Mads.* Maggots infesting sheep.

*Male, or Mail.* A sack, budget, portmanteau.

*Marish.* Marshy, moorish.

*Martilmas.* Martinmas, or St. Martin's day, Nov. 11.

*Mast.* The fruit of oak, beech, chesnut, &c.

*Mather* \*, *Mother*, or *Moether.* A young girl. *Norf.*

*Maudeline.* Sweet maudlin, a plant. *Achillea ageratum.*

*Meany.* Many.

*Meath.* Supplies with food.

*Meslin.* A mixture of different kinds of grain, as of wheat and rye.

*Mew, or Mews.* A place where

---

\* The term is still in use. "A woman and her mather," means a woman and her daughter. I have been informed by an intelligent friend, who is a native of Norfolk, that on a certain trial in that county, it was asked who was the evidence of what had been stated? The answer was, "A mather playing on the planchard." The judge was nonplussed, till the meaning was explained, namely, "A girl playing on the floor." -

hawks and horses are kept, a general name for stables.

*Michers.* Thieves, pilferers.

*Mickle.* Much.

*Miers.* Mires.

*Misdeem.* To think ill of.

*Mitch.* Much.

*Mo.* More.

*A Mome.* A dolt, a stupid fellow.

*Mowls.* Moles.

*Muck.* Dung, manure.

*Mulley.* A provincial name for a cow.

*Muskmillion.* Muskmelon, a plant.

## N.

*Naveus.* Rape, rapè cabbage, or wild turneps.

*A Neat.* Black cattle, the cow-kind.

*Nep.* Catmint, a plant.

*Netty.* Natty, nice, neat.

*Noddies.* Simpletons.

*Nowls.* Heads.

*To noy.* To annoy, to trouble.

*Noyances.* Hindrances.

*To nurt.* To nurture, nurse, bring up.

## O.

*Onely.* Only, pronounced as three syllables.

## P.

*Paggles, or paigles.* Cowslip primrose, the *primula officinalis*.

*To pass.* To surpass, to excel. Also to decide.

*Pass of pelf.* Expenditure of money.

*Patience.* A plant, patience rhubarb, the *rumex patientia*.

*Peason.* The Saxon plural of pea.

*Peeces.* Pieces.

*To pilch.* To pilfer.

*Pilcrow.* The paragraph, or ¶.

*A Plot.* A plan, a chart.

*Pollengers.* Pollard trees.

*Poret.* A plant, probably a kind of leek?

*Porkling.* A young hog, intended for pork.

*A Pouch.* A purse.

*A Poultier.* A poulterer.

*Prest.* Ready, quick. Sometimes neat, *Norf.*

*Prie, privy, prim.* Privet, a plant.

*To profess.* To believe.

*Pullen.* The Saxon plural of pullet.

*A Puttock.* A cormorant, a ravenous fellow.

## Q.

*To quite.* To requite.

*To quail.* To lament, be sorry for, pine away.

## R.

*Ream, or reame.* Realm.

*Reasty.* Rancid, usually pronounced rusty.

*Reek.* Smoke.

*Reisins.* Raisins, or currants.

*Respe, respis.* Raspberries.

*Retchless, or reckless.* Careless.

*To rig.* To make free with.

*To ringle.* To ring, as a pig is ringed.

*Riping.* Ripening.

*A Roister.* A noisy, turbulent fellow.

*Rowen.* Rough grass.

*Roynish.* Mean, paltry, mangey.

## S.

*Saverly.* By saving.

*To scramble.* To contend for, by trying to seize an object equally free to more than one.

*To scotch.* To notch, or cut.

*To scrawl.* To scrawl.

*Scruplesness.* Scrupulousness.

*Seely.* Silly, foolish, simple. Also, according to Johnson, lucky, fortunate; but in this sense his interpretation appears doubtful.

*Seggons.* A poor starvling labourer?

*A Serviture.* A servant, or serving man.

*To sew.* To draw. Applied to fish-ponds.

*Shent.* From the verb *to shend*, ruined, spoiled, injured.

*Shere.* Share, portion of.

*Shold.* Should.

*Shot.* Reckoning.

*Shred pies.* Mince pies.

*Siethes.* A culinary herb, a kind of chives.

*Slake.* Slack.

*Slivers.* Pieces of split wood.

*To snudge.* To affect closeness or secrecy.

*Sod.* Sodden, boiled.

*Soller.* A loft or upper chamber, from the Latin *solarium*.

*Sops in wine.* A plant.

*Sosl.* From the verb *to soss*, to

render dirty, to puddle; hence *sess-pool*.

*Souse.* The ears, feet, &c. of pigs pickled.

*Soutage.* The cloth in which hops are generally packed.

*Sparage.* Asparagus.

*Spialls, or Espialls.* What takes in an extensive field of vision.

*Specred, or speared.* From the old verb *to spear*, or perhaps *to spire*. A term in malting, meaning that the barley is sprouted, or shot out.

*Spight.* Spite.

*To spill.* To spoil, to destroy.

*Spilt.* Destroyed.

*Spurlings.* A kind of fish, probably smelts?

*To staddle.* To cut woods in such a manner as to leave, at certain distances, young plants to replenish it.

*Stadles.* Young growing trees, left after cutting underwood.

*Staid.* Detained.

*To sterve.* To starve.

*To still.* To distill.

*To store.* To stock.

*Stover.* Fodder for cattle, or any food, except grain.

*Stroyal, or stroiall.* A contraction of *destroy-all*, a person who delights in waste.

*Sturs.* Stirs, disturbances.

*Süer.* Sure.

*Suit.* Sort, kind.

*Suites.* Kinds.

*Sweet Johns.* A plant of the pink-kind, the *dianthus barbatus*.

## T.

*Tack.* Substance, proof. Spoken of food.

*A Tally.* A score, or reckoning.

*A Tale.* A numeral account.

*Tampring.* Tempering.

*To ted.* To spread abroad new-cut grass.

*A Tedder.* A rope or cord to tie cattle at pasture. "To live within the tedder," means, to live within bounds.

*A Tems loaf.* Bread made of wheat, or a mixture of wheat and rye, out of which the coarser bran only is taken.

*To tend.* To attend.

*Thack.* Thatch.

*Thacker.* Thatcher.

*Than.* Frequently used by Tusser for rhyme's sake, instead of *then*.

*That.* Often used for *what*. As "keep *that* is thine own," instead of *what*.

*To thorough.* To work its way through, or off.

*A Thresher.* Sometimes used for a duster of furniture, as well as in its proper sense.

*Thry-fallow.* The third fallow; perhaps also cross-fallowing?

*Tidy.* Small, neat.

*Tilman.* A man who tills the ground, a bailiff.

*Tilture.* Tillage.

*Tine.* Wild vetch or tare, a plant.

*Tils.* Light-made diminutive horses, gallowsays.

*Titters.* A noxious weed among corn.

*Topping.* Fine, gallant.

*Toused.* Pulled, pinched.

*Treen dishes.* Earthenware.

*Trick.* Neat, nice.

*Troth.* Truth.

*A Tumbrell.* A kind of cart.

*A Turn-broche.* A turn-spit.

*A Twigger.* Any thing that pulls or draws strong. "Twinlings be twiggers."

*A Twinling.* A twin animal, one of two produced at a birth.

## V.

*To vance.* To advance, to raise.

*To vermine.* To destroy vermin.

*A vice.* A fool or punchinello of old shews.

*Vittle.* Victuals.

## W.

*Wadling.* Watling.

*Waid.* Weighed.

*To waine.* To direct to one, to turn back to?

*To wand in.* To enclose with wands.

*Warily.* Warily.

*Wark.* Work.

*Wast.* Waste.

*To wraul.* To contend with ill-humour, to quarrel.

*Wrauling.* Peevishness, like that of an infant. *Saxon*.

*A Webster.* A clothier, also a weaver.

*A Wheel, or Wheel.* A snare or trap for fish, made of twigs. A basket.

*A Weft.* A loss.

*A Wenuel.* A weaned calf. *Norf*.

*To wax.* To wax, to become.

*Whist.* Silence.

## Glossary.

*A Wight.* A person, a being, now obsolete, except in a ridiculous sense. *Woodsere.* Decayed or hollow pol-  
lards. Also the fall of the leaf.

*Wood, or Wode.* Mad, frantic.—

Y.

*North.*

*To yerck.* To wince.

## ERRATUM.

P. ii. note 2. line 1. for 1573 read 1580.

HARDING AND WRIGHT,  
PRINTERS,  
St. John's Square, London.







COUNTY  
RESERVE STOCK

RETURN TO

COUNTY LIBRARY BOOKSTORE

WORTH ROAD

ST. ALBANS, HERTS. SG13 7DG

1983

A CHARGE  
IS MADE FOR  
REMOVED OR  
DAMAGED  
LABELS.

H22 061 241 2

